

## About Dr. Hovind

Do you know the scientific facts supporting Biblical Creationism? Do you know the facilities in the theory of evolution?

Dr. Kent Hovind is one of the foremost authorities on Science and the Bible. He has debated evolutionist at many universities across America and is dedicated to the proclamation of factual, scientific evidence supporting the biblical record of creation and the history of the world. His fact-filled creation seminars are exciting and informative, causing even the most devout evolutionist to sit up and take notice!

Christians will be encouraged in their faith and non-believers will be seriously challenged to reconsider their beliefs!

Dr. Kent Hovind is from Pensacola Florida, but originally from Illinois. He was a high school science teacher for 15 years. He travels around the country speaking on creation, evolution, and dinosaurs over 700 times a year.

The following information has been transcribed from several public messages given by Dr. Hovind on the subject of Creationism versus Evolutionism. It is being offered to encourage and strengthen the faith of believers and to convince the unbelievers there is a God who loves them and wants a personal relationship.

As you read this, it is important to remember, Dr. Hovind has three goals:

- To strengthen your faith in the word of God. He believes the Bible is the infallible, inspired word of the living God.
- If you are not saved, He wants to get you converted. He will tell you right up front, Im after you, so dont be surprised.
- If you are saved, and you are not doing much for the Lord, he wants to make you uncomfortable. There is war going on, we all need to get busy. God has a ministry for everyone.

## Contents:

**Page 1 - Introduction** *About Dr. Hovind*

**Page 2 - Chapter 1** *How Old Is The Earth?*

**Page 15 - Chapter 2** *Dinosaurs And The Bible*

**Page 32 - Chapter 3** *Leviathan: The Fire-Breathing Dragon*

**Page 45 - Chapter 4** *Evolution, the Foundation For Communism, Nazism and Socialism*

**Page 70 - Chapter 5** *The Hovind Theory*

**Page 83 - Chapter 6** *Questions and Answers*

# Chapter 1

## *How Old Is The Earth?*

There are four great questions every one is trying to answer in life.

- Who am I?
- Where did I come from?
- Why am I here?
- Where am I going when this life is finished?

There is a war in progress with two opposing world views, or the way that one looks at the world. Your belief will determine how you are going to behave. If you believe the evolutionist world view, that says man is just an animal and that we got here by blind random change, your answers to these four great questions are different from the creationist world view. Who am I? Well, if you believe in evolution, you are nothing important. You are just a bit of protoplasm that washed upon the beach a couple of million years ago. Where did I come from? If you are an evolutionist, you came from a cosmic burp about 20 million years ago. Where am I going when this life is over? Dont worry about it. You will just go back to star dust.

The Bibles answer is considerably different. Genesis 1:1 says, ***In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*** Now, if God created it, then He is the boss. He makes the rules. If God wants to say in His written word that women should dress modestly then he has the right to say that. If you go to the beach in Pensicola, Florida you will see that it is bare season all the time there. Just because there is a little sand and water around, it doesnt make it right to dress immodestly. The Bible says a lot of things, like, Children, honor your father and mother. If the Bible is the word of God, then we are in a lot of trouble. God is the boss. He is the creator.

Apparently, the devil has always been rebellious against Gods authority. In Genesis 3:1, Satan came to Eve in the garden of Eden, and the first sentence out of his mouth was, ***Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?*** It is interesting that the first statement out of his mouth ended in a question mark. Number one, he tried to make Eve doubt the word of God. The second thing he said was in Genesis 3:4, ***Ye shall not surely die.*** After he got her to doubt the word of God, he used outright denial. Now the third thing is in verse 5. The devil said, ***...ye shall be as gods..***, He wanted Eve to think, if she ate of that tree, she would become like God. The sentence, ***...ye shall be as gods..***, is the whole philosophy of evolution in a nutshell. The devil wants you to believe that we are improving or progressing. He wants you to believe that we are headed to Godhood. He wants you to believe that we started off as an ameba, and that we are getting bigger and better, and stronger and smarter, and some day we are going to sail around the universe and discover new life forms like Star Trek.

People ask me all the time, Dr. Hovind, do you think that there is intelligent life on other planets? I tell them, No, I taught high school for 15

years; I don't believe there is much intelligent life here on this planet. The Bible says that Eve is the mother of all living. The Devil is a liar! He told Eve that she would be just like God.

When I was about six or seven, I came running to the breakfast table. I was the first one there, and I got the last banana out of the bowl. It's just a Hovind tradition; you get out a banana, slice it and put it on your cereal. Pretty soon my two big brothers walked in. Now, my brothers are much bigger than me. They are both nearly six feet five inches and they are older than I am. They have always been older than I am. They said, Hey Kent, is that the last banana? I said, Yep, and I got it! How many of you have an older brother or sister, and you know that wonderful feeling when you finally pull one over on them? They pick on you all of your life. I had them that morning. They wanted the banana. Were they going to beg little brother for that banana? No. Do you know what they did to me instead? They lied to me. They said, Kent, do you know how bananas are made? I said, No. You see; I was only about six or seven. It's been demonstrated in laboratory tests that the brain doesn't even start to grow until kids are between 18 to 20 years old. How many of you parents can verify that? I said, No, how are bananas made? They said, Down in South America there are these spiders and they have these big long legs, and when they die, they hang up in a tree and all their legs fold up; then mold grows on those dead spider legs. They said, Bananas are really dead spider legs. I said, you guys are just lying to me so that you can get my banana. They said, No, we wouldn't lie to you brother. Cut it in half and you can see where the legs were. So, I cut the banana in half, and sure enough there were those black spots in there. They said, Are you going to eat those moldy spider legs? I said, I don't believe I want them. I didn't eat bananas for nearly three years.

Have you ever been lied to before? Has somebody told you a lie? The devil is a master liar. He lied to Eve and he's been lying for the past 6,000 years. He wants to destroy your life. Now, it's an awful thing when somebody lies to you and steals your banana, but the devil has bigger plans than that. He wants to lie to you and steal your soul. He wants you to go to Hell. Now, if you are already saved, he can't get you to go to Hell. However, he is going to keep lying to you, and try to still your life. Day by day he is going to try to get you to invest your life in things that are dumb and unimportant so that when you get to Heaven, you will have nothing to show for your life. What are you doing with your life that is going to matter a thousand years from now? You may say, Well, I'm memorizing all the names of all the football teams. Who is going to care a thousand years from now? Who won the Super Bowl seventeen years ago? Do you know? Does anybody care? It doesn't matter does it? All those men out there, fighting over that ball, and they can all afford to buy their own football. I'm not saying that this is bad, but when you look at it from the perspective of where you will be a thousand years from now, it's a waste of time to invest all of your life in things like that. What are you doing for the Lord? The devil is very successfully wasting Christians' lives; he's a liar!

Adolph Hitler said, *If you tell a lie long enough, loud enough, and often enough, the people will believe it.* The secret to get someone to believe a lie is constant repetition. Just tell it over, and over, and over again. That is what they have done in advertising. It's classic to look at the way different

products are advertised. Marlboro cigarettes, for example, have been advertised with cowboys for years as if there is some kind of connection. Nobody stops to think, Now wait a minute, what is the connection between smoking Marlboros and cowboys? Do all cowboys smoke? No. Do you have to smoke to be a cowboy? No. If you start smoking Marlboros, do you automatically become a cowboy? No. You may smell like a horse, but you are not a cowboy. Actually, you may be surprised that it has been demonstrated in laboratory tests that nobody in the world smokes. The cigarette smokes. The person is the sucker; thats all.

It is a lie! They want you to think if you smoke Marlboros, youre a cowboy. Now, the connection takes place in the mind. There really is no connection, but psychologically people start thinking there is some kind of connection, and if they start smoking, they start walking around thinking, Hey, Im a cowboy. Something happens; they have been sold a product by associating it with something else. The same thing happens when they try to sell beer. Beer wouldnt sell buy itself; so, they have mixed it in with sports as if there is some kind of connection. They always get some big football player holding his can of beer. He has his Buddummer, or Budstupid, or what ever it is called. Somebody said they call it Budwiezer. Have you seen them when they are finished drinking that stuff? They are not wiser!

He has his Buddummer or his Miller Low Life, and he says, Man, you ought to be a football player. Drink Bud! Wait! Hold on a minute! Stop the train! Do you want your football player full of beer when hes out there calling the plays? Is there any connection between beer and sports? Fill your defensive end full of beer before the game. Heeey, anybody seen number fouuurteen, or was it thhirteen? There is no connection between sports and alcohol, but theyve been associated for so long that people have started to think they belong together for some reason. Its classic to watch those commercials.

Take the Indianapolis 500 for example. You will see the guys racing around the track at 200 mph. A flash of the sign says, Drink Bud. Wait, wait, wait! Dont drink Bud when you are going 200 mph. Do you know what? It sells the product. Its a very affective advertising technique to take something useless and mix it in with something good. People want the good; so, they will take the useless right along with it. They think somehow the two are associated. Folks, that is exactly what has happened in the teaching of evolution.

Evolution is a religion. It is not science. It has nothing to do with science! It has been mixed in with science for so long that people think it belongs there for some reason. I collect public school textbooks. I have scores, and scores of them. The Merrill Science- First Grade Science Book, states: *Earth has changed, since its formation four and a half billion years ago.* (Merrill Science- First Grade Science Book, 1989 Teachers Edition, page 46.) Wait a minute. Is the earth four and one half billion years old? No, it is not, but if you tell kids in the first grade this, theyre going to believe you. You see; first graders believe everything that you tell them. They believe that bananas are moldy spider legs, if you tell them that. Now, if you tell kids this when they are in the first grade, and you make sure to tell them again in the second grade, they will believe it. The second grade textbook, *Changes*

*On Earth*, states, *Since its formation four and a half billion years ago, earth has changed.* (Merrill Science- Second Grade Science Book, 1989 Teachers Edition, page 26.) Now, they add a new element a paragraph later, *Life too, has evolved on earth.* Oho! Life has evolved on earth? Oh yes, boys and girls. If repeat that in the first, second, third, and fourth grade, and continue that lie for 18 or 20 years in a row, hes going to believe you. Its Adolph Hitlers technique. If you tell the lie long enough, loud enough, and often enough, the people believe it.

We have millions of people that have accepted the theory of evolution as factual. This is because evolution has been mixed in with science throughout their educational processes. Now, science is wonderful! I taught science. I love science, but evolution has nothing to do with science! It has nothing more to do with science than beer has to do with football. There is no connection at all! By its own, it would not stand.

### ***First Law of Thermodynamics***

The best thing for a kid to learn in order not to be drawn into these crazy ideas of evolution is for him to learn some real science. The *First Law of Thermodynamics* tells us that matter cannot be created or destroyed. Now, obviously, there is a world here. We can all agree that there is a material world, so this leaves two choices. Now, this is going to be deep. This is going to be hard to understand. Since the world is here, there are only two choices. Somebody made it, or it made itself.

If you can think of another, one please let me know. However, these are the only two choices: Somebody made this place or this place made itself. Now, the devil does not want you to believe, ***In the beginning God created...*** He doesnt want you to believe that; so, he has very successfully attacked the first verse of the Bible with his *big bang* theory. How many of you readers have heard of the *big bang* theory?

Years ago, I was flying from San Francisco. Actually, I was not flying at all. I was sitting on the plane, and the plane was doing the flying. I happened to sit next to a professor from Berkeley University. Berkeley is not a Bible collage by any stretch of the imagination! Anyway, we begin talking about, inevitably, evolution and creation. I told him that I was a science teacher, and that I was working on my Ph.D. in education. By the way, I finally got it, and I found out that it stands for Post Hole Digger. He said, Great! What are you doing your paper on? I said, Im doing my research on evolution, and what effect it has on teaching it to kids. If you teach a kid that he is an animal, what effects can you expect?

We began to talk more on evolution and creation, and he said that he believed in evolution. I said, Then, I have a question. How did the world get here? Obviously the world is here. How did it get here? He said, Well, it came about by the *big bang*. Surely, youve heard of the *big bang*? I said, Oh, yes, yes. Ive heard of the *big bang*. I teach science. Ive taught it for years. Matter of fact, I believe in the *big bang*, but Im sure that my *big bang* is a lot different from your *big bang*. Would you please tell me about yours?

He said, Oh, I would be glad to. About twenty billion years ago, -- which is just what the textbooks state.

The Prentice Hall General Science Book states: *Eighteen to twenty billion years ago all the matter in the universe was concentrated into one very dense, very hot region that may have been much smaller than a period on this page.* (Prentice Hall General Science Book, 1992, page 61.) All the matter in the universe squished into a dot smaller than a period on a page? Thats one crowded dot folks to include all of the planets, stars, and people. How many of you remember that you couldn't breathe all squished and crowded together. It was awful, wasnt it?

The professor said, Oh yes, about 20 billion years ago all the dust in space started drawing together into this little bitty dot, and it was spinning real fast. Finally, it exploded out into space. Caa-boom! The big bang! I said, Sir, now wait a minute. Let me see if I got this straight. All the dust in space started drawing together, squishing together, spinning around, and exploded. Boom! And the pieces that flew off became the galaxy, and the sun, moon, stars, etc.. Is that what you are telling me? He said, Thats it. Youve got it. I said, Sir, can I ask you a couple of questions? I love asking questions to evolutionists; its one of my favorite things to do. He said, Sure, go ahead. I have plenty of time. I said, Sir, question number one. Where did all of this dust come from? He said, Well, we dont know that one for sure. It might have come from a previous explosion. It might be an oscillating universe. You know, exploding and imploding. I said, Okay, but you are evading the question? Originally, where did matter come from? Who made matter? The world is here. Matter is here. Where did it come from? He said, Well, we dont know that for sure. I said, Okay. No problem sir. You told me all of this stuff, and you dont know where it came from. All of it somehow got together. What made it get together? He said, Well, gravity man. All particles have an attraction for one another. I said, I understand that. I teach physics. I know about the invert square law, particle attraction acceleration due to gravity. I can tell you the gravitational constants on all of the planets and some of the asteroids, but that doesnt explain where gravity comes from. What is gravity? Who made it? Give me a jar of it and paint it red while you are at it. What is gravity? Who made the laws that govern this universe? Gravity, centrifugal force, inertia, all these laws that are governing these particles, who made the law? He said, Well, I dont know. I said, Okay, let me see if Ive got all of this straight now. All of this dust is in the universe, and you dont know where it came from; it all got together, and you dont know why it got together. He said, Thats correct. I said, Okay, then it was squishing real tight into this little bitty egg, a dot smaller than a period on a page, and it was spinning around until finally it exploded out into space.

I then said, Sir, question number three. Doesnt it take energy to make something move? He said, Yes. I said, Who supplied the energy? Who squished it, spun it, and exploded it, and who bought the gas to run this machine anyway? Where did the energy come from? He said, Well, I dont know, but I know that it happened because we are here. Wow! Thats brilliant logic! How do you deal with that? What more proof do you need? I said, Wait a minute sir, let me see if Ive got this straight. All of this dust squished together, exploded out in space. It had to happen. We are here,

and thats proof of it. Sir, can I ask you another question? He really didnt want to take another question by then.

He was 0 for 3. I could tell he was becoming tired of this question business. He said, Yes! Go ahead! I said, Sir, does Berkeley, where you teach, have a merry-go-round? He said, No, we dont have a merry-go-round at Berkeley University. I said, That is unfortunate. You can teach kids a lot of science on a merry-go-round. I began to explain the experiment, and it goes something like this. Put six kids on a merry-go-round, and get the high school football team out there to push them. Get them to push the merry-go-round clockwise just as fast as they can. Now, if you have a digital watch, you may not know what clockwise is. Its doesnt mean, BLINK, BLINK. You will find that the kids will go through four phases. The kids start off in phase one, screaming and yelling, This is fun, go faster, go faster! When you get up around 30 mph, the kids enter phase two. Phase two is where they stop screaming and become quiet; theyre just concentrating on trying to hang on for dear life. Somewhere around 50 to 60 mph, they enter phase three. Phase three is where they start screaming again, but now they are screaming, STOP! STOP! SLOW DOWN! Somewhere between 80 and 100 mph, inevitably you will enter phase four. Phase four is where the kids began to fly off the merry-go-round. Now, there is an interesting phenomenon of science that takes place here.

In a frictionless environment, if a spinning object explodes, something happens to the pieces that fly off. Take the merry-go-round experiment for example, if the merry-go-round is going clockwise, the kids that fly off will be spinning clockwise. This is call the *Conservation of Angular Momentum*. One of the laws says in a frictionless environment, if pieces fly off a spinning object they tend to spin the same direction, because the outer part is already spinning faster than the inner part. The Berkeley professor said, Oh yes, Im familiar with the *Conservation of Angular Momentum*. I said, Would you explain something to me? If this whole universe started from a big bang, everything should be spinning the same way. If our little solar system is a microcosm of the macrocosm everything should be spinning the same way. However, everything is not spinning the same direction. The professor said, I dont know how that happened. I said, Okay, maybe you can explain this one. He is 0 for 4 in the questions now. I said, These planets are not only going around the sun, the planets are also spinning around themselves. Each one revolves in its own day. Some are longer than others. Out of the 9 planets that we know of, at least 2 of them, Venus and Uranus, spin backward. Sir, if it all started with a big bang, how did 2 planets get to going backwards? He said, Well, thats interesting. I said, Oh, thats more than interesting. Thats pretty hard on your theory. You had better get a new one. He said, I dont know. I said, No problem, maybe you can explain this. Some of these planets have little moons going around them. There are 60 known moons in our solar system. Out of the 60 known moons, Mercury and Venus do not have any. Earth only has one of them. **Out of the 60 known moons, at least 11 of them are spinning backwards, 4 of them are traveling backwards, and 2 planets have moons going both directions at the same time.** Would you please explain that? Why do we have all of this retrograde motion in our little solar system, plus who knows what else in space? If it all started from a big bang, it should all be going the

same direction. He said, I dont know. How do you think it happened? I said, Very simple sir, in the beginning, God created the heaven and the earth, and God did that it way on purpose just to make the *big bang* theory look stupid. It is stupid! It is not science!

I continued, Now, I must caution you, I do believe in the *big bang*. I believe very strongly in the *big bang*. However, my *big bang* is a little different than your *big bang*. II Peter 3:10 talks about the big bang. It says, ***But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.*** There it is, *big bang*! You see, there is going to be a *big bang*, but it hasnt happened yet. So, you kids in school, the next time your teacher asks you if you believe in the *big bang* say, Oh yes, I do teacher, and you better get saved and ready for it, because its coming. The world is going to end that way, but it did not start that way.

## ***Second Law of Thermodynamics***

Lets learn some more science here. The *second law of thermodynamics* says: everything tends toward disorder. In other words, if you leave something alone for a while, it will rot or rust or die or break down or fall apart. Everything becomes chaos after a while. Go home and take a look at your bedroom; youll see a classic example of what Im talking about. Better yet, ladies, look at your hair-do when you wake up in the morning. Everything tends toward disorder. Fellows, I cant figure this out. Ive been married 20 years; my daughter is 14 years old; maybe someone can help me. Why does it take the girls an hour of hard work in the morning in order to look natural. If you try to be natural, you dont need a mirror. You just get up and go to work. Thats natural. You dont want them to look natural, and I dont either.

This idea of: If you leave something along long enough, its going to get better, is bologna! Nothing gets better, left to itself! The textbooks all teach, Oh yes, boys and girls, man is improving, progressing, ye shall be as gods. This is the same lie that the devil started 6,000 years ago. He wants you to think that we started off as an ameba, and we progressed up through all of these stages, and that we are improving, in spite of the second law of thermodynamics.

The public high school textbook, Holt, Rinehart, Winston, 1989, shows a picture of a fossilized starfish on the right (figure 1-4.) Look over to the left of the picture to read what it says about this starfish. It says, *3.4 billion years old, the remains of the early ancestors of modern human beings.* (Holt, Rinehart, Winston, 1989, page 294.) Ancestors of human beings are starfish? Wow! Ill bet he could pick cotton! Now, I didnt write this. This is what the textbooks are stating. Thats... Grandpa.

Please dont laugh at this next picture (figure 1-5.) It is a picture of my brother when he first wakes up in the morning - after he has had a cup of coffee. Look what it says, *About 30 million years ago, these primates evolved. They are ancestral to both humans and modern ape.* Ancestors to humans? Grandpa? What big eyes you have! Look, folks, they cant seem to figure it out. For 30 or 40 years now our public school textbooks have been



teaching our kids nothing other than that they are an animal. They cant figure out why most of them act like animals today.

Now, many public school teachers, principals, and school board members are frustrated to death by what is happening, and there are some good, godly ones out there. We need to help them, and encourage them. Im telling you that the textbooks currently used have become increasingly atheistic and communistic. Evolution is taught as if it is a fact. It is no longer taught as if it is a theory, and that ought to be against the law. If you are going to teach one side, you ought to have to teach both sides. Some of you ought to run for the school board, and change that, like many counties are doing across this country. There is an unbelievable grassroots movement. Christians are getting on the school board and turning this around by ordering textbooks that do not teach this garbage.

If I told you, If you kiss a frog, it will turn into a prince, you would say, No, frogs dont turn into princes. Do they? How many of you ladies got your husbands by kissing a frog? I think that we all can agree, this idea that, *if you kisses a frog and it will turn into a prince*, is a fairy tale. Frogs dont turn into princes. Go ahead and try it all that you want to. However, in the textbooks, they are still teaching this fairy tale, but now they have transferred it into science, and they teach it as fact. You may ask, What textbook says that a frog turns into a prince? Every biology book in the public high school says this. Our textbooks will tell you that we started off as an ameba, and we have progressed up through fish, amphibian, reptile, and finally up to modern man. Ohoo! guess who is the ancestor of modern man? A frog. This is the same fairy tale; a frog changed to a prince, but they have changed it a little bit. Instead of a kiss, they have come up with something a little more complicated than that. This magic ingredient to change a frog into a prince is billions and billions of years. Time, right?

How many of you have heard that the world is billions of years old? You will see it on all of the TV programs like Marty Stouffers *Wild America*. Its on Carl Pagans (I mean Segans) show, *Cosmos*. Billions of years ago... We are bombarded with it. You see it in National Pornographic (I mean Geographic.) They talk about, Billions and billions of years ago, as if it is some kind of fact! Now, just slow down a minute.

Is the world billions of years old? You might say, Everybody believes that the world is billions of years old. In the first place, everybody doesnt believe that. In the second place, even if they did, it wouldnt make it right. Majority does not make it right! The majority is frequently wrong. Do you know for many years they thought that the earth was in the middle of the solar system and that everything went around the earth? Thats what everybody thought. The majority believed it, but it certainly didnt put the earth in the center. Majority of opinion is meaningless in an argument. They could all be wrong. For many years, they taught that heavy objects fall faster than lighter objects. Gallileo proved that teaching wrong. Did you know that this teaching was universally taught for 2,000 years? Everybody believed that heavier rocks fall faster than lighter rocks. Its true that a lot of people believe that the world is billions of years old, but it doesnt make it billions of years old just because the majority believes it.

For years they taught that, if you are sick, you have bad blood. George Washington was bled to death by his own doctors in 1799. He was sick, and

they said, Oh! Call the barber quick, the President is sick! Call the barber? Yes, back in those days, you went to the barber if you were sick. He had a razor. Thats why the barber pole has a red strip around it today. He would let blood for you if you were sick. They cut Georges wrist and drained out some blood. Of course, they had to keep him balanced, so they cut the other wrist also. They drained blood out of both sides of his body to keep him balanced, and he got worse. So, they bled him again. He got worse than before. They bled him a third time, and he died. They said the same thing that they say today when a patient dies, Well, we did the best that we knew to do. Yes, he was standing at deaths door, and they pulled him through, or pushed him through.

This idea of majority of opinion being right is crazy. Those doctors that killed George Washington were sincere men. They were highly educated, intelligent, and dead wrong in what they believed. We have professors and teachers today that are very sincere and highly trained. They are sincerely motivated. I dont question that, but they are wrong when they teach that the world is billions of years old. The earth is not billions of years old!

Ill give you an analogy to show you how this works. If you went scuba diving and found a sunken ship, an old Spanish Galleon, and on board that ship you found a treasure chest, you would open the chest up and say, Ohoo! Wow! Gold coins! Yea! Were rich! Well, wonderful, but before you become excited about that, lets think about it for a minute. If I asked you the question, When did the ship sink? you would say, I dont know;, I didnt see it; I just found the box. I say, Okay, lets see if we can figure out when the ship sank. If the coins in there have dates on them, and there is a coin in there dated 1700, right away you know the boat sank after 1700. That would make sense, wouldnt it? Certainly, it did not sink before 1700 or there wouldnt be a coin in there with the date of 1700. If you find another coin in there from 1600, that doesnt mean anything. We still know from the other coin that the ship sank after 1700. If you went through the chest and you found the youngest coin, it would be the limiting factor as to when the ship sank, not the oldest coin in the chest.

There are many ways to try to find out the age of this earth, but if just one of them shows it to be young, then it has to be young. I could take my Casio Data Bank watch, and carbon date the plastic, and say that it carbon dates at 14,000 years old, and that proves that it is 14,000 years old. No, it doesnt! You should find the youngest factor, not the oldest factor. This business of taking the age of the earth and proving it is billions of years old by looking at carbon dating, uranium lead, potassium argon, and rubidium, is all backwards. There is a lot of ways to PROVE that this world IS NOT billions of years old.

Lets look at what the Bible says in Matthew 19:4. Jesus said, ***And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female.*** He is talking about Adam and Eve. Jesus said the creation of Adam and Eve was the beginning. Wait a minute! If the world is billions of years old, then Jesus was clearly wrong, because it wasnt the beginning when He created Adam and Eve. Mark 10:6 says the same thing, ***But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female.*** Romans chapter 5 says there was no death until Adam sinned. Therefore the creation of Adam and Eve

had to be the beginning, so this business of the pre-Adamic civilizationthe gap theory, is clearly unscriptural, unscientific and unnecessary as we will see. The world is not billions of years old!

The Bible says that Adam lived 130 years and begat a son named Seth. Seth lived 105 years and begat Enos. Enos lived 90 years and begat Cainan. Cainan lived 70 years and begat Mahalalee, and on, and on, and on. Its idiot proof. Its all explained right there in Genesis chapter 5. By the way, the Bible says that Adam lived 800 years after he begat Seth, and begat sons and daughters. Sons and daughters? People always ask, Where did Cain get his wife? He married his sister. Calm down! In the first place, there was no other choice. In the second place, there would not be a problem. There was no genetic load, and you wouldnt have deformed children, because both genetic gene pools were pure. It wasnt so bad to marry his own sister. Adam married his own rib. I could agree with that for one or two generations. It happens in the animal world all of the time with very little consequences. By the way, it also says that Adam lived 800 years after he begat Seth. That would have been long enough for Adam to have known his great great great great great great great grandson, Lamech. Noahs daddy knew Adam (see *Longevity Chart Adam To Joseph* in Appendix A on page A-8). Adam almost got to meet Noah. Could you imagine a family reunion back in those days? Okay kids, lets get on the camel, because we are going to go visit great great great great great great grandpa Adam, and he is going to tell us what it was like to live in the garden of Eden before the first woman ate the first man out of house and home.

If you add up the dates given in the Bible, you will find that the world is about 6,000 years old. Now, Im not one of these guys who puts an exact date on it, and says it was 4,004 BC, April 3, at 2:00 p.m. I dont believe that one can get that close in Scripture, but I do know that Adam was created in the afternoon, because it was just before *Eve*. I think I know why God made Adam first. I cannot prove this, but I think that he made Adam first because He did not want any advice on how to do it. Thats just my theory. I cant prove that. The dates in Scripture add up to about 6,000 years, not millions and billions. Somebody is wrong!

### ***Population Growth***

Lets look at some facts from science. As we examine another coin in the chest, lets see if the Bible is right. The longevity chart shown in figure 1-6 illustrates the population of the earth. In 1985, we crossed the 5 billion mark. Now, if you dont know what a billion is, dont worry about it because congress doesnt either. In 1977, there were 4 billion people in the world. In 1962, there were 3 billion. In 1930, there were 2 billion. Here is an interesting thought. Most of the people born in 1930 are still alive. They are only 65 years old. Now, it has been said that there are more people alive today than there are people that are dead today. We might have more people alive than have ever died from Adam to the present. This is an interesting concept. The population growth curve is pretty fascinating. In 1800 there were only 1 billion people in the world. Back in the year 0, during the time of the birth of Jesus, there was only 250 million people in the

world. The population growth curve looks as if the whole thing started 4,400 years ago.

Now, right or wrong, good or bad, the Bible says that about 6,000 years ago (4,000 BC) God created the heavens and the earth. About 4,400 years ago there was a flood that destroyed the world, and eight people survived. Starting from eight people, you could easily generate a population of 6 billion in 4,400 years.

If you believe in evolution and that man has been here for millions of years, you have a serious problem and don't realize it. If man has been here for millions of years, there would be a lot more people. The fact that we only have five and one half billion people helps to prove the Bible is correct. Jesus said that the book is correct. He believed it from cover to cover. It's been 4,400 years since the flood, that's what the Bible says. Keep those numbers in mind, 6,000 years for the creation, and 4,400 years for the flood. Those are important numbers.

### ***Sun Shrinkage Rate***

Let's look at some more facts from science another coin from the treasure chest. The sun is burning! How many of you knew that already? As the sun burns, the sun is shrinking. Boyle Observatory in England has been keeping careful records of the sun's diameter for 300 years. It oscillates a little bit, but the general trend is that the sun is shrinking 5 feet every hour. That has been the case for the 300 years that it has been observed. Dealing with science that is observable, testable, and demonstrable, the sun is shrinking. Now this is going to be complicated. If the sun is shrinking that means it used to be what? That's right; it used to be bigger. Five feet per hour is the shrinkage rate; so, if you were to go back in time to an hour ago, the sun would have been 5 feet bigger. If you go back a few thousand years ago, there would be no problem. If you want to tell me that the earth is millions of years old, then we have a problem. Twenty million years ago the sun would have been very big at the current shrinkage rate assuming that it is a linear progression, or that it might be geometric, or logarithmic. I understand all of that. I taught mathematics and science. Either way, it puts a time limit on this model. If you excel 20 million years ago at today's shrinkage rate the sun would have been so big that it would touch the earth. This of course would have made life very uncomfortable.

If you want to tell me that the dinosaurs lived 70 million years ago, they would have fried. They would have been charbroiled. They would have been inside the sun. The world cannot be millions of years old. You will have to alter your theory to fit within a shorter timeframe than that.

### ***Existence of Comets***

Let's take a look at some additional facts of science. Comets fly around the solar system, and comets are constantly losing material. You can't just keep losing and losing because pretty soon you will have a problem. It's kind of like your checkbook. You see; the Bible is very plain: if your outgo exceeds your income, your upkeep will be your downfall. Astronomers guess that comets only last about 10,000 years and then they break apart. Now,

that brings up a very good question. Why do we still have comets? They should all be gone! People ask me, Hey that is a very interesting concept. Why do we still have comets? Im just a high school science teacher, but here is my theory. I believe the Bible. I believe about 6,000 years ago God created the heavens and the earth, and that is why we still have comets. Our universe is only about 6 or 7 thousand years old. Simple! That explains the comet. That explains the shrinking sun. It also explains the population.

### ***Stellar Facts***

Scientists say, It takes thousands of millions of years for stars to evolve from red giants to white dwarfs. You had better study your history. All of the ancient astronomers said that Sirius was a red star. Today it is a white dwarf. This occurred within 2,000 years not millions of years. Stellar evolution needs to be rethought. They say that it takes millions of years for these planets to cool off. Wait a minute! Jupiter, Saturn, and Uranus are all hot, and yet they are rapidly cooling off.

If we walked into a room and found a cup of coffee on the table that was boiling hot, I would say, Dont touch that, its hot. You would say, Whose is it? Then I would say, I dont know. Its been sitting there for 4,000 years. Its so hot, yet it has been sitting there for 4,000 years. Dont you think that is a little far fetched? The planets are not billions of years old.

Saturns rings are still expanding, and they are not billions of years old. They are still separating the particles by the *Pointing Robertson Effect*. They are not billions of years old.

### ***Distance To The Moon***

The moon goes around the earth. As the moon goes around the earth, the moon is getting further and further away. We are slowly losing the moon a couple of inches a year; no big deal; it's nothing to worry about. This is going to be complicated; so, read very carefully. If the moon is getting further and further away from the earth, that means that it used to be closer. Scientists will agree with that. Now, wait a minute! A couple of thousand years ago that wouldnt make a big difference. If you want to tell me that the earth is millions or billions of years old, you had better get your calculator because it makes for a serious problem. If you bring the moon back in closer, it would cause trouble because the moon causes the tides. If you bring the moon back in a couple of million years ago, the tides would have been so high that it would have drowned everything on earth twice a day. Everybody knows that you can only drown comfortably once a day. If you want to tell me that the dinosaurs lived 70 million years ago, then I know what happened to them. They got sick of drowning twice a day! Man, they quit! They gave up! They said, This evolving is too hard; Im not going to do this anymore! The simple fact is: the earth cannot be billions of years old.

### ***Space Dust***

The porthole of the Mercury Space Capsule is so scratched that you cannot clearly see through it. The dust in space impacts the glass, and if you are going 18 or 20 thousand mph, the dust scratches the glass. There are little pits all over the glass. You see; outer space is full of dust. The Berkeley professor was right. The space capsules came back all dented. That proves it. Scientists have calculated the approximate volume of dust in space, and there is a lot of discrepancies. Everybody is coming up with a different number, but there is a lot of dust out there.

As the moon goes around the earth, it runs into the dust. Therefore, the moon is collecting dust on the surface, kind of like the way your windshield collects bugs certain times of the year. The dust on the moon is getting thicker, and thicker, and thicker. It is widely estimated as to how much. In 1954, Isaac Asimov calculated that there would be at least 54 feet of dust on the moon because the moon is billions of years old. They calculated the accumulation rate to be 1 inch of dust every 10,000 years. July 20, 1969, we landed on the moon. Before that, the surveyor probes went up and checked things out, so they knew that the dust wasnt there, but Armstrong proved it dramatically when he stepped on it. In 1969, Neil Armstrong stepped off the Lunar Lander Module, and he said, One small step for man, one giant leap for mankind. Everybody cheered, but nobody heard the next two words that he spoke. The next two words that he said were: Its solid! The moons surface was solid. The depth was only three-fourths of an inch thick. Well now, wait just a minute! If it takes 10,000 years to produce one inch of dust, and the dust is only three-fourths of an inch thick, that means that the moon is not 10,000 years old yet. So the evolutionists at NASA were thinking, Where is the dust on the moon? Ill bet those Christians went up there and cleaned it just to make us look stupid. They dont need any help to look stupid; theyre doing fine own their own.

I can tell them where the dust is on the moon. Its very simple. Do you know why the dust is only three-fourths of an inch thick on the moon? It is very simple. You see; about 6,000 years ago God created the heavens and the earth. Its only about 6,000 years old. It is certainly not millions of years old. The dust accumulation proved that to them, but they didnt catch on.

They brought rocks back from the moon and tested them. They used eight different methods to see how old they were. They used uranium lead, potassium argon, etc., to find out how old these moon rocks are. They got eight different numbers; so, they threw them all out since they didnt match, and they picked the number that they wanted anyway. They dont know the age of the moon by carbon dating it, or by potassium argon dating.

### ***Earths Magnetic Field***

The earths magnetic field is getting weaker and weaker with time. It cannot be millions of years old. The magnetic field, by the way, is one of the things that they are not taking into consideration when performing carbon dating; because, the magnetic field is one of the things that prevents the formation of carbon 14 (C14.) If the magnetic field is weakening, then we are getting more C14 than they had 5,000 years ago so it throws everything off.

An excerpt from an article I read says, *On New Years Eve, 1990 at midnight, wait 1 second before you ring in the New Year.* You need to add a tick to the clock, because earth is slowing down. The earth is spinning. How many of you knew that? As the earth is spinning, it is gradually slowing down one thousandth of a second. A one thousandth of a second per day is no big deal. You probably didnt notice it last night when it slowed down one thousandth of a second. If you do that for 1,000 days in a row, you will now have 1 second and 1,000 days, which is about two and one half years. Therefore, every two and one half years you will have to add 1 second to the clock. June 1992 is two and one-half years after midnight of 1990. The June issue of Astronomy Magazine announced, *Be sure to add a second to the clock. Earths rotation is slowing down. At midnight, we are going to have leap second.* Leap second? How many of you have heard of leap year before?

Most people do not realize that every two and one half years we leap a second, because the earth is slowing down. Now, this is going to be complicated. If the earth is slowing down (and, it is,) that means that it used to be going faster. If you go back in time 6,000 years, Adam and Eve's day was 36.5 minutes shorter than ours. If you want to claim that the earth is millions of years old, you have a problem. Get your calculator and check it out. You want to tell me that the dinosaurs lived 70 million years ago. If they did, I know what happened to them. They were blown off the surface of the earth. The winds were 5,000 mph from the *Coriolis Effect*. The earth was flattened out like a pancake. The days and nights were about 20 minutes each. No, you are mistaken. The earth is not millions and billions of years old. The slowing rate of the earth proves that; it puts a time limit of some kind on it. Wake up, and smell the coffee. It cant be billions of years old. Now, you may need billions of years to make your theory to look reasonable. The scientific facts say: No, it is not billions of years old.

### ***Erosion Factor***

The continents are eroding into the sea; they are just melting away. At the present erosion rate, they will be gone in 14 million years. The oceans are filling in with sediments. Both of those numbers are much less than the 4.6 billion years they tell us for the age of the earth. It is not billions of years old. As the water runs off the earth, it brings salt into the oceans; therefore, the oceans are getting more salty every day. A simple one to watch and to clearly verify is the Dead Sea in Israel. It is easy to calculate the salt washing into the Dead Sea, and the volume of salt that is already in there. The calculations show the Dead Sea is about 13,000 years old. Wait a minute! If the world is millions of years old, why isnt the Dead Sea even saltier? See, the Bible has the best answer. About 6,000 years ago, God created the heavens and the earth. There are saltwater vents in the bottom of the Dead Sea, adding more salt than they realized. It is only now being recalculated to show 4,000 to 5,000, maybe 6,000 years oldnot millions of years old. It is the same thing with the salts in the ocean. They are a little harder to calculate.

The Mississippi River is dropping sediments at the rate of 80,000 tons per hour into the New Orleans Delta. Wait a minute! They can measure the size

of the Delta divided by the sedimentation rate. It comes out to be 20 or 30 thousand years for the whole Louisiana Delta. Hold it! If the world is millions of years old, why isn't the whole Gulf of New Mexico filled in with mud by now? It should be all full of mud. You may say, Wait a minute! You said the world is only about 6,000 years old. The Delta is 20 or 30 thousand years old. Doesn't that prove that the Bible is wrong? Absolutely not! You see; it is very simple. Here is my theory. I believe about 6,000 years ago God created the heavens and the earth. About 4,400 years ago there was a world wide catastrophic flood. As the flood waters went down, about three fourth of that mud washed out there in the first 20 minutes. So the Delta only looks 30,000 years old based on today's sedimentation rate. They forgot to allow for one big flood. II Peter 3 warns us that there are going to be scoffers that will not take into consideration the creation or the flood.

### ***Oil Under Pressure***

Sometimes people drill down into the ground and hit oil. An interesting fact is oil is frequently under pressure. There have been oil wells found that have 20,000 pounds per square inch (psi). Put that in your car tire and watch what happens to it. The geologists say that the rocks should have cracked and the pressure leaked out long ago. The maximum for the oil pressure is 10 to 15 thousand years. Now, I have two obvious questions? Where did the oil come from? They will say, Oh, it come from plants and animals that were crushed and buried. Okay, why is it still under pressure? They say, Well, this oil is slowly seeping into these high pressure zones. Hold on! Oil is seeping into a high pressure zone? When did that start happening? How come my car tire goes flat instead of filling up? Nothing goes into a high pressure zone.

I have a theory concerning where the oil came from and why its under pressure. Im just a high school science teacher, but honestly I think it is very simple. I believe that about 6,000 years ago God created the heavens and the earth, just like the Bible says. About 4,400 years ago there was a flood. In that flood, many plants, animals, and people drowned. They were buried under the mud and rocks. After the rocks, the mud got 3 or 4, and sometimes maybe even 10 thousand feet thick on top of them. It got pretty heavy as the mountains eroded after the flood, the mountains actually arose (Psalms 104), and this created more pressure that squished them into oil.

Scientists can take a ton of garbage and squeeze it into a barrel of oil in about 20 minutes in the laboratory. The oil is down there as a result of the people and animals that drowned in the flood, and it has only been there for about 4,400 years. That is why it is still under pressure. Stop and think about that for a minute. When you drive to work, you drive over some of your ancestors. Next time you are at the gas station pumping them in you can say, By grandpa. You should have gotten on the Ark, and you wouldn't be having this problem. That is where the oil came from the flood caused it. God didn't create the oil, the coal, and the natural gas just to be deceitful to humanity. It was caused as a result of the flood. Think about the judgment of God on sin every time you use any oil or natural gas or drive down a black-top highway.



## ***Oldest Tree***

The oldest tree in the world is the Methuselah tree in southern California. Dating trees is a funny science. You can get all sorts of answers. The textbooks state that the oldest tree is 4,300 years old. Now that is interesting. If the world is millions of years old, why dont we have a tree some place that is 20,000 years old? Is it just a coincident that the oldest tree is 4,300 years old? I have a theory on that. I believe about 6,000 years ago God created the heaven and the earth. About 4,400 years ago there was a flood that destroyed the world. Therefore, to find a tree that is 4,300 years old fits fine with my theory. If you believe in evolution, it creates a little bit of a problem. If it is millions of years ago, show me an older tree.

## ***Erosion Of Niagara***

Niagara Falls is eroding rocks off the edge, and it has been eroding for about 10,000 years according to textbooks. Why do they say that? They know that Niagara Falls causes rocks to break off the edge and it moves back. Until most of the water was diverted for a hydroelectric plant, the Falls were moving 4 or 5 feet every year. They know that. The Canadians even built a big concrete wall on their side to prevent it from eroding Canadian soil. They want to make sure that it erodes on the American side and not the Canadian side. Fly over it and see it for yourself. Its only 12 miles from where it started. At 5 feet a year, you can move about 12 miles in about 10,000 years. I have a question. If the world is millions of years old, why hasnt Niagara Falls eroded all the way back up into Lake Erie or clear over to California for that matter? Why is Niagara Falls where it is? I have a theory on that. Here is my theory. I believe about 6,000 years ago God created the heavens and the earth. About 4,400 years ago there was a flood. As the flood waters went down, half of that river probably washed out in the first ten minutes because there was a lot more water moving through soft sediment. Today it is hard rock and its just a trickle compared to what it used to be. Therefore, 10,000 years for Niagara Falls really translates to 4,400 years plus one flood. They forgot the flood; thats the problem. The simple fact is: the earth is young. It is not billions of years old. Now, if you need billions of years for your religion, Im sorry; get a different religion. Its not billions of years old. The facts are against that.

What concerns me the most is the effect that this one theory of *billions of years* has done to the church and everyone else. It has been devastating. Crawford Toy was engaged to marry Lotty Moon. Have you ever heard of Lotty Moon? Southern Baptists have their Lotty Moon offerings every Christmas. Crawford Toy was a brilliant seminary professor who claimed to love the Lord and love the Bible. In 1880, he became convinced that the world was millions of years old because that was what everybody was teaching. Crawford became confused about that and he swallowed it. He said, Okay, if the world is billions of years old then the Bible is wrong. He said to his class one day, The Bible intends to teach a plain six day creation. The Bible is simply in error at that point! Crawford, the Bible is in error? If you believe the world is billions of years old, you cannot believe the Bible is true from cover to cover. SOMEBODY IS WRONG!

You may ask, You mean the world is not billions of years old? No! Well, what about the dinosaurs? When did they live? What about the cave men? What about carbon dating? What about star light? How does the light get here from the stars that are billions of light years away? What about the Grand Canyon; didnt it take millions of years to form the Grand Canyon? What about the geologic column, you know, Cenozoic, Mesozoic, Paleozoic, Archeozoic, what about all of that stuff? What about the ice age? We will cover these topics in the following chapters.

## **Chapter 2**

### *Dinosaurs And The Bible*

In the first chapter, scientific evidence was presented that proves this world is not billions of years old. There are those that would like every child to believe that this world is billions of years old -- and it is not. They want children to believe that dinosaurs lived millions of year ago -- and they did not. This lie is a pagan religion being forced down the throats of our children. That pagan religion is evolution. I am often asked, Why do you always refer to evolution as a religion? Isnt it a scientific fact that the world has evolved? No, no, no! It is a far cry from a scientific fact.

On the back of my business card, there is a long-standing offer of \$10,000 for anyone that can present scientific evidence proving evolution. The evidence must be empirical, testable, and demonstrable. This offer is not because I am looking for a fight. I am like the Quaker that says, Sir, I would not harm thee for the world, but thou art standing where I am about to shoot. I am just weary of our tax dollars being used to force their pagan religion into the school system. Evolution is a religion: nothing more, nothing less! Evolution is just something people prefer to believe because of their life style. It is important that citizens put a stop to this misuse of our tax dollars. Publicly funded institutions, including parks, museums, and public schools, should not be allowed to use taxpayer dollars to even mention evolution or billions of years ago in relation to the earths age, especially to teach it as a fact, unless they are going to teach other options.

Dinosaurs were nothing more than giant lizards in the garden of Eden. Dinosaurs lived with Adam and Eve. They were big lizards, and lizards never stop growing. This brings us up to the flood. If they were in the garden of Eden, the first 1,600 years of mans life on earth, what happened to them? Did Noah have dinosaurs on the ark? Certainly! You ask, Dinosaurs on the ark? The Bible says that he had seven of every clean kind,

two of every common kind. The ark was pretty big. Let me give you some facts about the size of the ark. The ark measured approximately 450 feet long, about 75 feet wide, and 45 feet high. The deck would have measured 97,700 square feet. This is verifiable in the Bible; look it up. No other ship was as large as this one until the Italian vessel, *Eturia*, built in 1884. The ark was about half the length of the 1,018 foot *Queen Mary*. The ark had the capacity of 520 modern railroad stock cars. Americas leading systematic taxonomists list the number of species to be 3,500 mammals, 8,600 birds, 5,500 reptiles and amphibians, and 25,500 worms, for a total of 43,100 different animals and insects. The overall average size of the animals was about the size of a sheep. They would easily fit into 150 box cars; so you see, they had plenty of room.

You ask, Dinosaurs on the ark, but dinosaurs are so big? Noah was pretty smart. Noah was 600 years old, and he was probably smart enough to figure out that you do not have to bring the biggest ones you find. Bring babies. Just be sure to get a pink one and a blue one. I would say that there are a lot of reasons to bring babies: 1.) They were smaller and took up much less space. 2.) They would sleep a lot more. 3.) They would eat a lot less; which means they would have to bring a lot less food. 4.) After the flood was over, they would live longer to produce more offspring. That is why they brought them in the beginning. Furthermore, he only had to bring two of each kind, not two of each specie or variety. This is where people become confused..

There are 250 subspecies of dogs in the world. Noah did not have to bring Great Danes, Chihuahuas, St. Bernards, and Dalmatians. All Noah had to bring was two of the dog kind. From those two generic mutts, dogs have diversified until we have the different varieties in existence today. The definition of *kind* in the Bible is more like our classification system of family. Two from each family of animals, which greatly reduces the number. I would say that the basic dog kind diversified after the flood into the Wolf, the Coyote, the Hyena, the Chihuahua, the Great Dane, the Doberman, and so on. These are all variations, not evolution! They are still the same kind of animal -- a dog kind of animal.

People say, If that big boat sailed around and landed on Mt. Ararat, why cant we find it? There is a lot of controversy about that. Maybe it has been found. There are two competing schools among creationists that are looking for the ark. One group says the ark is on Mt. Ararat. There was a good CBS special on about that. There is another group that says Noahs ark is not even on Mt. Ararat, that it is twelve miles away in the valley called, *The Valley of Eight*. Nobody seems to know why it is called *The Valley of Eight*. There is also a village there called *The Village of Eight*, and nobody seems to know why it is called *The Village of Eight*. There were eight people that got off the ark; that is an interesting thought. Mt. Ararat is located right near the corner of Iran, Turkey, and Russia, just twelve miles from the Russian border. Twelve miles from Mt. Ararat, in another one of the mountains of Ararat, is a strange boat-shaped structure. The Bible says that the ark landed on the mountains of Ararat (plural) so it might be on a different mountain or valley. There is a strange boat-shaped structure pictured in a book by Ron Wyatt. Mr. Wyatt says that the boat-shaped object is Noahs ark. It is 515 feet long, which is 300 Egyptian royal cubits. Assuming that

this is the ark, it is obvious that the ark has collapsed in on itself and folded out to the sides, leaving what is now visible as a tear-dropped shape. It would have been there for quite a while, and the ark is no longer navigable! Mr. Wyatt drilled all through the area and found all sorts of petrified animal dung, which is what you might expect after being in the ark for a year.

The Turkish government believes that this is Noah's ark, and to prove it, and to built a visitors center near the structure as shown in the figure 2-1. It is easy to walk right up to it; however, after Saddam Insane (I mean Hussein) ran all the Kurds out, warring factions spread all over that area, making it a very politically unstable area to visit. Needless to say, the visitors center is not doing very much business. Huge anchor stones (figure 2-2) have been found all around the area. These are 9,000 pound rocks, about 3 or 4 miles away from the sight itself. Some may ask why the anchor stones are not next to the ark. If this is the ark, it is possible that after the ark landed the ropes were cut, and they said, Hey lets get out of this thing. Then God said, Not yet, stay there, then another wave moved the ark four or five miles.

After the flood, people began to kill the dinosaurs. The Bible says in Genesis chapter 9 that man was allowed to eat meat after the flood. The dinosaur would be a likely target. They killed them off to be heroes, or just because they were a menu. There would be a lot of hamburger in one dinosaur. Who wants to live next door to a tyrannosaurus rex? For example, how many grizzly bears are in your county? Except for those in a zoo, probably none. How many were there 500 years ago? There was probably a large number. What happened to them? As the population of people increases, the population of ferocious animals decreases. They are either killed off or driven away. As the population of the world grew after the flood, the population of the dinosaurs shrank. For the first 1,000 years or so after the flood, people were killing dinosaurs. Maybe you are a hunter? Do you ever go hunting for Bambi? If you were in your tree stand and a herd of deer came running right under you with only three bucks in the herd and you only had time to get off one shot, which one would you go for? The biggest one, right? There is just something about men. If you are going to shoot one, shoot the biggest one. I wonder how the hunter felt right after the flood, with dinosaurs available? I can see him now, shooting a brachiosaurus, putting him on the back of a jeep, and dragging him down to the taxidermist. He says, Hey, mount this thing for me! Im going to hang him on my wall!

There are literally thousands of legends around the world of people slaying dragons. How did these legends start? Taking in to account that the stories have probably gotten out of proportion through the telling of them, could it be that they were based on historical fact? Beowulf slew a dragon Prince George; Gilgamesh; and St. John all slew dragons. There are many accounts such as these. The Catholic Bible even tells, in the book of Daniel, about dragons. Could it be that Nebuchadnezzar had a dragon in captivity. Nebuchadnezzars seal on his ring was the god Marduke on the top of a fire-breathing dragon. That is the Babylonian symbol. Did they have dinosaurs back then? In the Catholic Bible, the book of Daniel has two extra chapters, Daniel 13 and 14. Daniel 14 tells the story of Daniel slaying a dragon that

Nebuchadnezzar had in the palace. Did they really have a dinosaur in Babylon in 600 BC? Well, it makes sense from the Biblical account.

The Bible teaches that the flood was 4,400 years ago, which is 2,400 years before the birth of Christ. In Nebuchadnezzar's time, 600 BC, 1,800 years had transpired since the flood. Most of the dinosaurs had been killed; however, a few were still around and if you could catch one you would be a hero. They would put one in a cage for you so you could have a dragon of your very own. There are lots of stories like that. Saddam Hussein is spending millions of dollars reconstructing the original cities of Babylon. When the ancient walls of the city of Babylon were unearthed, they were intact, perfectly preserved. Etched into the walls are carvings of dinosaurs and lions. Dinosaurs? The Babylonian dragon? How is it possible for them to have known what a dinosaur looked like if they had not seen one?

If you believe in evolution, this is impossible. Dinosaurs could not have been living with man! That is impossible because you have already been taught by your high priest (the professor), that dinosaurs died out 65 million years ago, and man did not arrive until 3 million years ago -- when Lucy crawled up out of the gorge in Ethiopia. I know what you have been taught, and you do not dare believe anything different or they will excommunicate you from the temple, that is the university. That is what I was taught. The Christian explanation is much simpler. Dinosaurs lived with man all along. The world is only six or seven thousand years old. After the flood, the climate changed which caused the dinosaurs to not grow as big and to not live as long. Another factor, is that man started hunting and killing the dinosaur. Therefore, the dinosaur became smaller and very rare. Up until the time of Nebuchadnezzar, there were still some around, even up until modern times after Christ.

Two hundred years after the birth of Jesus Christ a Roman Mosaic was made showing two long-necked dinosaurs (figure 2-4) fighting or kissing. What they are doing is not important. What they are is important. How could you have dinosaurs on a Roman Mosaic from the second century AD? They were not excavating dinosaur bones and piecing them together. How could they make such detailed images of these critters, unless they had seen them? Again, a creationist perspective makes perfect sense. A few dinosaurs were probably still in existence 1,800 years ago. From the evolutionary perspective, the story of dragons doesn't make very much sense. They all have to be mythology. Chinese have lots of stories of their emperors using dragons to pull their chariots on special occasions. Chinese dragons? Many Chinese recipes call for dragon saliva, bone, or teeth ground up for special medicines. Could it be that they were really killing off dinosaurs? It makes perfect sense to me. The Vikings even made their ships to have a dragon's head (figure 2-5). Why? A lot of Scandinavian legends tell about the giant dragons that lived in the sea. These dragons would devour their ships; so, they made their ships to look like the dragons. Now, whether that would attract or repel them is another subject to discuss.

In 1572, an Italian scientist, Ulysses Aldrovandus, documented the entire account of the killing of a dinosaur. He even had the dead body mounted for a museum. Wait a minute Dr. Hovind! A dinosaur was on display in an Italian museum only 400 years ago? Again, from a creationist perspective,

that makes sense. It was apparently a small tanystropheus dinosaur. There are lots of stories about dinosaurs.

I have a friend in the Philadelphia area who died a short time ago. His widow gave me pictures that he had taken in the Grand Canyon (figures 2-6 and 2-7). All over the Grand Canyon there are petroglyphs, rock carvings, scratched into the walls of the Canyon. There among the petroglyphs is a scratched, embossed, image of a dinosaur. A dinosaur? In the Grand Canyon? You mean the Indians hunted dinosaurs? Here is another petroglyph (figure 2-8) from Africa. The native on the left is running from the dinosaur on the right. Smart native! If you believe in evolution, this is wild, too far out, cannot be true. From a Bible perspective it is very possible.

There are literally thousands of stories of people sighting sea monsters during the days of sailing ships. Columbus had a hard time getting a crew because they were afraid of sea monsters. It doesn't take much brain power to figure out this one. The sailing boats were pretty quiet going through the water. If there were sea monsters out there, a sailing ship could get close to one. Today, the boats have big diesel engines and steel frames. Sound travels great distances under water; therefore, the critters can hear you coming fifty miles away. They simply learn to avoid the shipping lanes. By the way, huge sections of our oceans have never been sailed. NEVER! The winds and currents are contrary and the seaweed in the Sargasso Sea is too thick. They just avoid those areas and sail around them.

Could there still be dragons, dinosaurs, and sea monsters out there? It makes sense to me. Missionary Hans Egede from Greenland, tells the story of sighting a sea monster off the coast of Greenland. He said that it stuck its head up level with the top of the ship. It had two little flippers, flappers as he calls them, on the front. A dinosaur with two flippers -- a sea monster? In 1848, Captain Peter MQuhae of the H.M.S. Deadalus, and his crew, watched a sixty-foot sea monster swim directly under their boat. The sailors on board said, Captain, please don't say anything about this. Don't write it in the log book for sure because we are going to get laughed at for the rest of our lives. If we go back to port and tell them that we saw a dinosaur, they are going to laugh at us. What would happen to you if you were fishing in the Gulf of Mexico and spotted a dinosaur. When you returned home and said, Hey! I saw a dinosaur; they would find you one of those long-sleeved jackets that tie in the back. Right? The very idea of a dinosaur still living is too far out for some folks to believe. However, there are lots of stories of giant critters in the sea.

There are stories of octopus pulling ships under water. There are many stories like that. You say, Awe, come on Dr. Hovind! Now you have gone overboard. Octopuses never get big enough. They would never pull a ship under water. In the first place, octopuses are shy, elusive creatures. I understand all of that, but you see octopuses never stop growing just like reptiles. Now stop and think about it. If you were an animal that never stopped growing, it might be possible for you to reach the magical size where you would become big enough that you no longer had any enemies. They used to chase you, now you chase them. You say, Wait a minute! The Guinness Book of World Records states that the largest octopus in the world was 36 feet, which was caught off the coast of Kodiak, Alaska. I have also

read Guinness, but they did not perform their research very well this time. There have been bigger octopuses. The one shown in figure 2-10 washed up on the beach in St. Augustine, Florida in 1896. It was 200 feet across and weighed five tons. That is not even the biggest one.

A whale was caught in Seattle, Washington one time and all around the whales body were scars. Octopuses have suckers under their arms, and they use them to latch onto their prey. The circular scars on the whales body were 18 inches in diameter. They said, What kind of octopus had a hold of this whale? Awe, it must have got caught when it was a baby, and it got loose; the whale grew, and the scars stretched. Well, maybe so, but when they cut that whales stomach open, they found the arm to an octopus. The whale had bitten it off and swallowed it. The arm was 150 feet long. One arm! You see, whales like to eat octopus. Thats one of their most favorite things to eat. If a whale ever gets sick from eating too much octopus, it will regurgitate. If you ever see a piece of regurgitated octopus floating around the ocean, grab it because, believe it or not, its worth more than gold pound-for-pound! Do you have any idea as to what they make from puked up octopus? Perfume. That explains a few things; doesnt it fellows? Perfume, ambergris, regurgitated octopus. Sorry, Im not joking; thats one of the things they use to make it -- among other things. Giant octopus!!

Not only that, there have been some giant squids found out there. A 57-foot squid washed upon the beach in Canada in 1877. Just a few years ago in the late 1980s, an 80-foot squid washed upon the beach in Nova Scotia, Canada. Eighty-foot squid?

Dinosaurs have always lived with man, and they are even mentioned in the Bible. You say, Wait a minute! Dinosaurs in the Bible? Yep! In the book of Job chapter 38 there is mention of dinosaurs. Let me explain..

The book of Job has forty-two chapters. In the first two chapters, Job lost everything. His camels, sheep, and oxen were stolen. I mean everything went wrong for Job. Did you ever have one of those days where everything goes wrong? Job had one of those weeks. He lost it all. He had ten children, and all ten children died at the same time. His house burned. Everything went wrong. He lost his health. He sat there in the ashes covered with boils from the top of his head to the bottom of his feet. A boil is like the worlds worst zit. Job was covered in them. As he sat there with a broken piece of pottery scraping the puss out of the boils that covered his body, his four friends came to torment him (I mean to comfort him.) Among his friends the shortest man in the Bible was mentioned. There was Bildad the Shuhite (shoe height). Thats pretty short. Old Bildad, Eliphaz, Zophar, and Elihu came to visit Job. By the way, Bildads cousin was the next to the shortest man, his name was Nehemiah (Knee-high-my-ya.) Thats also pretty short. Some people say that Simon Peter must have been pretty short because he slept on his watch. You would have to be short to do that.

These four men, Bildad, Eliphaz, Zophar, and Elihu, came and talked to Job for thirty-five chapters. From chapter 3 all the way through chapter 37 is the story of these four men arguing with Job about why everything went wrong. It was a typical answer, just like Christians give today. If something bad happens to someone else, our first thought is, Well, he deserves it. He must have done something wrong. If you fall down and break an arm, or break a leg, some dear brother or sister will come and say, Awe, I see God is

punishing you. Oh no! If something bad happens to somebody and you don't know why it happened, you should pray for them, encourage them, love them, and shut your mouth! Let God take care of why it is happening to them. It is none of your business. God handles that kind of stuff. Stay out of it! These four men were just determined that Job had sinned, and they were going to straighten him out. They were going to set the record straight.

While Job was scraping the puss, he said, God, why is this happening to me? I've been trying to serve you. God, why? Look, you don't have to have a whole lot of life behind you before some tragedy will come to you, and you will say, God, why? I am not an expert on tragedy. God has given me a wonderful life, but I have had a little. I have three children here, and three in heaven already. You don't always need to know why. You just need to know who is in charge, that's all. Who is the boss? You see, the problem Job had was the same problem you and I have. Job was a good, godly, righteous man who was kind of proud of his righteousness. He didn't cuss, drink, or chew; and he didn't go with girls that do. He was a righteous man. He was a nice guy; he went to church; he tithed; he was a deacon; he did it all. He was a good guy, which is all fine, but when you become proud of your righteousness, that's when you have a problem.

The Lord came in chapter 38 to answer Job's questions. Job asked, God, why is this happening? In Job 38:1 the Bible says, ***Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said, Who is this that darkeneth counsel by words without knowledge?*** In other words, Job, your four friends do not know what they are talking about. Verse 3 says, ***Gird up now thy loins like a man; for I will demand of thee, and answer thou me. Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth?*** I read that, and I thought, God, that's a dumb question! Job was sitting in ashes; his children were all dead; and he was scraping the puss out of his boils, and you come down and say, Job, where were you when I built the earth? I thought, Job was not there when you built the earth? He knows that, and you know that. Why bother asking the question? Well, Job did not answer the question; so God asked him another one. Verses 4b and 5a say, ***Declare, if thou hast understanding. Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest?*** Job does not answer that one either; so, God asked him another one. Verses 5b and 6a ask, ***Who hath stretched the line upon it? Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened?*** If you read these next four chapters, you will see that God asked Job eighty-four questions. Job never said a word. Job never answered one of the questions, not one. These kinds of questions don't need an answer. They are designed to change your attitude. Where were you when I built the earth? Job wasn't there.

Now, this is going to be deep and hard to understand. When God asked Job the question, Job, where were you when I built the earth, Job was not there. He knew that and God knew that, but asking him the question made Job think, You know God, that means you are older than I am. Did it ever occur to you that God is older than you are? Did it ever occur to you that God is probably smarter than you are? Has it ever occurred to you that God is probably richer than you are? He probably has more money than you and me. Did it ever occur to you that nothing ever occurred to God? Think on



that one for a while. Stuff occurs to me all the time. I say, Wow, I never thought of that before. God never has that experience. Try to sneak up on him sometime. Say, Hey God, did you know --- Yes son, I know. He already knows. He knows it all. Nothing ever occurs to God.

Here was Job sitting there wondering why this was happening to him and he said, God, why did you take away my children? God, why did you take away my camels, my sheep, and my oxen? Everything has gone wrong. God, why? Then God came down and asked, Job, where were you when I built the earth? At first, I didnt get the connection. I thought that was a dumb way to answer Jobs question. The more that I read it, the more I realized that God hit it smack on the head. Job didnt really need to know why; he just needed to know who was in charge, that was all. Like the little child whose mommy says, Hold my hand while we cross the street. The child says, Why mommy? The mother answers, Just hold my hand. The child says, Why mommy? The mother says, Because your bottom will start hurting if you dont. The child says, Oh, okay mommy, I understand now. Ill hold your hand. Just do what God says. If you have tragedy in your life, you dont need to know why, you just need to know who is in charge. Put the Lord first, and everything will be fine. You see, Romans 8:28 says, ***And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.*** All you really have to worry about in this life is to make sure that your life is right with God. When this is settled, just know that everything that happens works together for your good. Now, the individual things that happen may not be good, like the recipe for a cake. You dont want to eat a cup of flour; it would not be good. You wouldnt want to eat two tablespoons of salt. But when you mix those things together, you can make a lot of things. Things will work together for your good.

God was purposely asking Job questions to try to change Jobs attitude. These are the kinds of questions that dont need an answer. The answers were obvious. Its the same kind of question you dads ask your children. Children tend to get to a certain age where they get kind of cocky. The child thinks that he ought to make the rules around the house. You dads and moms will understand this. Once in a while a child gets to the age that he thinks he ought to make the rules, and he comes in and says, Hey dad, you know, Ive been thinking, I believe that I ought to make the rules around here. I believe that I should be able to stay out until four oclock in the morning. After all Im ten now. The dad says, Hold it just a minute! You want to know why you cant stay out until four in the morning? Now son, let me ask you a few questions first. Who pays the electric bill around here? Who pays the gas bill? Who pays the water bill? Who bought the car? Who pays the insurance on the car? Who fixes the car when it breaks? Who bought the tires on the car? Who bought those clothes that you are wearing? Who bought that bed that you slept in last night? Who pays for the house where you are sleeping? Who pays for that hot water that you used to take a shower about a week ago? Who pays for all of that food you eat? Who pays for your medical expenses? Lets just get it straight right now. The Bible is very plain, He who payeth the bills, maketh the rules. Well, I am sure it is in there somewhere. The dad continues to say, Get it straight, son, me dad, you child! If you are going to sleep under my roof, eat

off my table, and raid my refrigerator, you are going to do it my way! When you want to do it your way, you go get your own roof to sleep under, your own refrigerator and table, and then you can do it your way. Me dad, you kid. Get in line son! He says, Yes sir, dad. Children, if your mom and dad ever go off in one of those tirades, this is what you should do. While they are asking you all those questions, just nod your head. Try to look intelligent and shut your mouth. That is what Job did. God is asking Job these questions, Job, you want to know why your children died? Job, I am God. That is all you need to know son.

Job never did find out why his children died? God never did tell him until he got to heaven. Hey, would you still serve the Lord if everything went wrong, and you never found out why? Many Christians quit serving God when one little thing goes wrong. I quit, Im not serving the Lord anymore. You know what the problem is? The problem is, you have a small god. You do not understand with whom you are dealing. How big is your God? Have you ever thought about that? If your God is big enough to tell you what to do, then you will swiftly and cheerfully say, Yes sir, Lord. You are the boss! How big is your God? Hey, is your God big enough to tell you what to wear and what not to wear? Does God have any input into your clothing? Does God have any input into how you cut your hair? Does God care? In I Corinthians 11:14 the Bible says it is a shame for a man to have long hair. That is what God says. God says that women should dress modestly. God said children should obey their parents. How much input does God have in your life anyway? Hey, does God control the knob on the front of the TV set? You say, God doesnt care what I watch on TV. Yes, he certainly does! Psalm 101:3 says, ***I will set no wicked thing before mine eyes...*** Do you set wicked things before your eyes? How big is your God anyway? Is he really big enough to control the details of your life? He wants to, and its a wonderful life when you say, God, I will do what you say.

God was asking Job question after question. God asked in Job 38:16a, ***Hast thou entered into the springs of the sea?*** Scientists did not even know there were springs in the sea until about thirty years ago. God asked Job that question 3,000 years ago. God is asking him question after question, ***Canst thou send lightnings?*** No, I cant send the lightning. Job did not answer any of these questions. Jobs attitude is changing as God goes through this. Then God says in Job 40:15, ***Behold now behemoth...*** Now, what on earth is a behemoth anyway? You may have a center reference Bible which says that a behemoth is an elephant or a hippopotamus. If you have one of those, take your pen and cross that out. You say, Cross out something in the Bible? Not the Bible part, just the center reference part. You see, the Bible is inspired of God, the center references are not. Somebody else put those in there later. Some notes are very good. There are some great reference Bibles out there, but they flat blew it on behemoth. It is not an elephant or a hippopotamus as you will see.

God said, ***Behold now behemoth, which I made with thee; he eateth grass as an ox.*** I believe that behemoth is the brontosaurus. Now I understand that there never was a brontosaurus, if you want to get technical. There is the apatosaurus, the brachiosaurus, the cetiosaurus, and the polacanthus. Im familiar with most of them. What happened was, when they were putting the first one together at the museum, they got the whole

body together of a diplodocus except for a head. They said, We cant put this thing in a museum with no head. One guy said, I know where there is a head. It was four and a half miles away from the bones, but he said, That will fit. Therefore, they got a head from an apatosaurus, put it on the skeleton, and dubbed it brontosaurus. Later, they found out that they had mixed two animals together, but it was too late. Everybody still calls it brontosaurus, but actually there was no such critter. So, Fred Flintstone drives an apatosaurus not a brontosaurus. An apatoburger doesnt seem to ring a bell like a brontoburger. I will just leave it alone, and for the sake of discussion I will call it a brontosaurus even though I understand there wasnt one.

I believe behemoth was a brontosaurus. Now, wait a minute! God said, **Behold now behemoth, which I made with thee..** Was behemoth a dinosaur, and was he with Job? People say, Oh no! dinosaurs lived 70 million years ago. Wait just a minute! Would God say, **Behold now behemoth**, if Job could not behold now behemoth? That would be dumb, right? God says, Job look at behemoth. Job looks around and says, Where? Whats a behemoth? God says, Ugh! (snaped his fingers) I am sorry Job, they have been dead for 70 million years. What am I thinking? Never mind Job. Dont behold one, just think about one. Thats not what God told him. He told him to behold one. Therefore, whatever it is, God told him to behold it. Then He said, **...eateth grass as an ox.** People say, Wait a minute, Dr. Hovind, elephants eat grass. Yes, I know, lots of it, five-hundred pounds a day. Hippopotamuses also eat grass. I agree; I know brontosauruses eat grass too because their plant eaters. The description could fit either one of those animals. Verse 16 says, **Lo now, his strength is in his loins, and his force is in the navel of his belly.** That means the biggest, strongest part on him is his belly. People say, Just a minute! Elephants have a big belly. I agree, a big one. A hippopotamus is kind of big in the belly, and so is a brontosaurus. As a matter of fact, if a big belly was all that you had to worry about, there would be a lot of people that would qualify. Verse 17 says, **He moveth his tail like a cedar...** Now, wait a second! His tail is like a cedar tree? Have you ever seen an elephants tail? Would it remind you of a cedar tree? How about a hippopotamus? No. How about a brontosaurus tail? Yes! Verse 18, **His bones are as strong pieces of brass; his bones are like bars of iron.** This fellow has big heavy-duty bones, and they do. The picture shown with my knuckle and a tape measure in figure 2-12 is the toe bone of a brachiosaurus. If you feel your fingers, you will find that you have different bones in there called flanges. The second flange on a brachiosaurus is shown in the photograph.

Now, this is going to be complicated. The reason they had such big toe bones is because they had big toes. The reason they had those big toes is because they had big feet. Pictured in figure 2-13 is a little boy taking a bath in a brachiosaurus footprint. BIG FEET! Now the reason they had those big feet is because they had big legs. The picture shown in figure 2-14 is a picture of a man standing next to the front leg of a brachiosaurus. Just the front leg is twenty feet tall. Their head was fifty feet off the ground. That is as tall as a five-story building. If his head was just a little taller, it would be as tall as a six-story building, but thats another story. His bones

are like bars of iron. He has big bones. Now the reason they had those big legs is because they got had a big body

The biggest one found is still half in the ground in Alberta, Canada. They're digging it out of the ground, which is going to take years. From the bones found so far, the experts feel they are from a brachiosaurus. They estimate that from the tip of his nose to the tip of his tail is 150 feet long. This would be a new world's record for the longest dinosaur. China had the record. In 1986, they found a 140 foot long dinosaur. This one is going to break it by ten feet. They estimate that it probably weighed about 100 tons. Now big numbers like that don't fit into human brains. Congress knows that and takes advantage of it. One-hundred tons are a lot. A school bus only weighs six to seven tons, so a brachiosaurus like that probably weighed as much as fourteen school buses stacked on top of each other. That means, if he were to come by and step on you accidentally, or on purpose, it wouldn't matter, you would be deeply impressed by him. You would be road pizza when he was done. His bones are like bars of iron; he has big bones.

Verse 19 says, ***He is the chief of the ways of God.*** Hes the chief of the ways of God? The Hebrew word, *resith*, means that he is the principle; hes the first; hes the biggest; hes the *resith* -- the biggest. Hes the chief of the ways of God. Oh! Now wait a minute! That makes perfect sense. You see, the way the devil works is whenever God makes something the devil tries to steal the glory from God. I won't go off on a rabbit trail right now, but I'm pretty convinced that God put the Gospel in the stars, as in the Zodiac. Satan has twisted it and perverted it into the horoscopes of today, which has nothing to do with what God intended it to be. You know, as in Virgo the virgin, bringing forth the child, and all of that kind of stuff, the Gospel in the stars.

God has invented a lot of beautiful things and Satan has tried to twist and pervert them for his glory, including the dinosaurs. For instance, God invented music. God loves music. Music is wonderful, but Satan has twisted it and perverted it into ungodly forms of music. Someone asked me years ago, Dr. Hovind, do you know what you get when you play country music backwards? I said, No, I don't believe I do. He said, You get your hound dog, your pickup, and your wife, all back. There are some ungodly perversions of music out there. God invented marriage, the family, and sex. God made them male and female. He thoroughly understands it. You see, God's plan is very simple. One man and one woman get married and stay faithful for one lifetime. No premarital sex. No adultery. No fornication. No homosexuality. That's God's plan. It's wonderful, and it works great. Satan has tried to twist it, ruin it, and destroy it for folks every since God made the family.

God invented the dinosaurs, and Satan said, Ah ha! If he is the chief, I have to figure out a way to steal the glory from God using the dinosaurs. So what happened after the flood is that, dinosaurs were being killed off and becoming more and more rare. Five-hundred years ago they were real rare. People forgot them. Some were in existence in remote places of the world, but basically they were forgotten. Then two-hundred years ago, they begin finding the bones of the animals that had drowned in the flood and began to put them together.

The first dinosaur that was assembled was in 1841. They made many goofs. It was an iguanodon. What they thought was a horn on its nose later turned out to be its thumb. As they put these bones together, the devil must have been there, and as Richard Owens coined the term dinosaur to mean terrible lizard, the devil said, You know! These animals have always lived with man. They are basically gone and people have forgotten them. Im going to tell folks that these animals lived millions of years ago. Number one, they will never know the difference whether its a few hundred years or a few million years. The fact is they are gone, and people wont know the difference. Number two, it will serve a valuable purpose. If they believe that they lived millions of years ago, it will make them doubt the word of God, which is the whole purpose. Now, he has very successfully stolen the glory from God.

Boys and girls go through kindergarten at your and my expense, and they learn, Boys and girls, this is a dinosaur. What is the very next sentence that they learn? Something *about millions of years ago*, and Satan has gotten the victory all the way. Children start in kindergarten when they are three years old learning that dinosaurs lived millions of years ago, and they are brainwashed by the time they get out of high school. They are convinced that dinosaurs lived millions of years ago. The very thought that maybe they did not is foreign to their brain. You cant get it out of their mind. They did not live millions of years ago. He is the chief of the ways of God, and Satan has done a successful propagation campaign to steal the glory from the Lord.

Look at the rest of verse 19, ***...he that made him can make his sword to approach unto him.*** Verses 20 and 21 say, ***Surely the mountains bring him forth food, where all the beasts of the field play. He lieth under the shady trees, in the covert of the reed, and fens.*** Now the word fens means the swamp or the mire. Behemoth lived under the trees in the swamp. Thats what the Bible says.

### ***Dinosaurs May Still Be Alive!***

Well now, thats interesting. Did you know that there are some very large swamps in the world right now? The biggest swamp in the world is called the Likouala Swamp. Its in the Congo of Africa. That is 55,000 square miles of swamp land. Thats a big swamp! Fifty-five thousand square miles is bigger than the entire state of Alabama, which is only 50,000 square miles. Could you imagine a swamp bigger than Alabama? That swamp is bigger than the state of Arkansas, which is 53,000 square miles. You have heard of Arkansas where our president, and her husband Bill, comes from? Can you imagine a swamp that is bigger than the whole state of Arkansas? Do you know there have been many expeditions into that swamp? There have been over twenty scientific expeditions in the last fifteen years looking for dinosaurs still living today in the Likouala Swamp. You say, Dr. Hovind, wait a minute! Dinosaurs? You mean brachiosaures, brontosauruses, and apatosauruses are still living today in a swamp? Yep! Is it possible that there could still be a few dinosaurs living today, alive, right now? Yep! Dinosaurs still alive? Now, I dont want you to think that there are millions of them all over the world, and that you need to be careful when you go out.

Its not that way at all. There is probably none in your town, but there are some in a few spots in the world still alive right now.

The dinosaur pictured in figure 2-15 is a blondosaurus. Just be sure to talk to her kind of slow. I want to give you a few examples of dinosaurs that are possibly still around in the world today. In 1880, Belgium took over the Congo in Africa, which included this big swamp, known as the Belgium Congo. For many years Belgium colonized that territory. From 1880 on, they sent explorers to the Congo, and some of these explorers returned and some did not. Those that went into the swamp came back out and said, Boss, there are big critters in that swamp. They were known by several different names among the local natives. The most common name being Mokele-Mbembe (Moke-e-lay-mem-bee.) Dinosaurs in the swamp?

In 1948, the Saturday Evening Post published a huge article about *Dinosaurs Still Living In The Congo Swamp*. All along, there have been stories of dinosaur sightings in that Africa swamp. So finally, in 1980, Dr. Roy Mackal, a very famous micro biologist at the University of Chicago and a strong believer in evolution, decided that he was going to go and check it out. Dr. Mackal spent a fortune to go to the Congo swamp. He traveled around among the natives and asked them questions about the various animals that live in the swamp. He said the first thing that he noticed in the swamp was the mosquitoes. He calculated that the mosquitoes landed on them at the rate of about a 1,000 per hour the whole time that they were there. It was a relentless attack of blood-thirsty mosquitoes.

In spite of all the difficulties, they stayed there for six weeks. They talked to natives that went hunting in the swamp. The natives lived mostly along the main rivers, and they would go back into the swamp very reluctantly. When they did go, they wouldnt stay very long, maybe just a few hours, to try to find something and then they would quickly get out of the swamp.

Dr. Mackal said as they traveled around, they showed the natives pictures of different animals. He showed them crocodile pictures and the natives said, Oh yeah! Weve got those animals here. Dr. Mackal said, How big? The natives paced it off on the sandbar to be fifty feet long. Dr. Mackal said, Thats a pretty big crocodile. Are you sure they get that big? I believe it was on the 1984 expedition that they actually saw a fifty-foot crocodile in that swamp. See, crocodiles never stop growing either. Once you pass that magical point where you no longer have any enemies, its all downhill.

As Dr. Mackal continued to show the natives the pictures, he had a picture book of many different animals, some that lived in the swamp and some that didnt. He was going to test the natives to see if they were telling the truth. As they would thumb through the pages, they would say, Oh yes, hippopotamus. Yeah, weve got that one. Turn the page. Yep! Crocodiles, we have those. Grizzly bear. No, we have never seen that animal. Dr. Mackal turned the page and came to the picture of an apatosaurus, and the natives said, Oh yes, thats Mokele-Mbembe, he lives out in the swamp. Whats next? You know turn the page. What else do you want to know? It was no big deal to them. Dr. Mackal said, Mokele-Mbembe? You mean to tell me that you have an apatosaurus living in the swamp? Dont you know, thats a dinosaur? Theyve been dead for seventy million years. The natives said, Were sorry, we didnt know that. Weve never been to the University of Chicago to study evolution. All that we know is that we see one once in a

while as we fish out there. Apatosaurus still alive? Now, don't become excited. They are not one-hundred fifty feet long like they used to be. The natives claim that Mokele-Mbembe is only about twenty-five or thirty feet long. They say his body is about the size of a hippopotamus, but his neck and tail are real long. Which fits the pattern, by the way.

There have been some big critters spotted in this world that you will never hear about. There were some expeditions in a swamp where Brazil meets Venezuela. Colonel Fawcett, I believe was the gentleman's name, shot and killed a giant snake as it went across the river in front of them. They measured the snake, and it was seventy-six feet long. The natives said, Colonel, you should see the big ones. They said that they get much bigger than this, as much as one-hundred thirty feet. You see; lizards and reptiles never stop growing.

People don't live to be nine-hundred years old anymore as they used to before the flood. Dragonflies don't get to be three feet like they used to before the flood. Grasshoppers don't get to be two feet long like they used to before the flood, and dinosaurs don't get one-hundred-fifty feet long like they used to before the flood. The bones that we are finding today are the fossils of animals that were drowned in the flood. Nearly all of the fossils were formed 4,400 years ago. Somebody says, How old is that dinosaur bone? Four-thousand four-hundred years old. That's how old all of the fossils are, with maybe a few rare exceptions. Things don't fossilize unless they are quickly buried. The flood formed all of the fossils. The reason there are layers to them is due to hydrologic sorting. Animals with similar density are buried together. Birds are frequently found on top not because birds evolved last, but because birds were the last ones to drown in the flood. Birds have hollow bones and feathers, and when they do drown they float. Therefore, it doesn't prove an evolutionary sequence, it proves a flood. It all depends on how you want to look at the evidence.

The natives claimed that Mokele-Mbembe lived in the water and was very rarely seen. The natives that had lived there a lifetime may only have seen him once or twice or they may never have seen him, but they did claim to hear him from time-to-time. They claimed that he lived under the water and under the shade of the trees. Ah! Kind of like in the book of Job, ***...He lieth under the shady trees, in the covert of the reed, and fens.*** That is exactly what God told Job. They said that behemoth, this animal Mokele-Mbembe, would stick his long neck out and eat plants along the side of the rivers. They said that he was active at night, which means he was not often seen in the daytime. His favorite plant was the Molombo plant. They told Roy Mackal, If you want to find a Mokele-Mbembe, travel around the swamp until you find a place where there are lots of Molombo growing and where there are no hippopotamuses, because Mokele-Mbembe doesn't like hippopotamus. Matter of fact, Mokele-Mbembe doesn't like much of anything. They went on to say that if you were to come up behind him in a canoe, he would come up out of the water and smash your canoe with his tail and drown everybody in the canoe. They said he would not eat you, if that is any consolation; he would only kill you. They reported that he is not friendly at all. His very sensitive hearing enables him to duck under the water when he hears you coming, which makes your chances of spotting him close to zero.

Dr. Mackal went back the next year and spent one-quarter of a million dollars on a nine-week expedition and did not see the animal either time. He did gather all sorts of reports from the natives from villages all up and down the swamp. These were people that had no idea that Dr. Mackal was coming, and had no idea of what he wanted. They were just simply telling him about the animals in the swamp. They found footprints of Mokele-Mbembe. The animal comes out of the water onto land, smashing plants, looking for the Molombo plant to eat. The footprints were about the size of a hippopotamus, but with five claws on them. The hippopotamus doesn't have claws and neither does the elephant.

The natives claimed that one of their ancestors had killed one of these animals. Dr. Mackal asked the natives, Does Mokele-Mbembe ever die? Do you ever see a dead one? They said, Oh, Mokele-Mbembe is the god of the river. He never dies. Of course, that is an exaggeration. He said, Do you ever kill one to eat it? They said, Oh no! Our grandfathers killed and ate one, and they all died.

I have a missionary friend that has been in the Congo swamp for over forty years. His name is Eugene Thomas. I talked to Eugene when he was on furlough a couple of years ago. I said, Eugene, do you have dinosaurs in the swamp? He said, Mr. Hovind, I have lived there for forty years and have traveled extensively in that swamp. I generally stay in the village with the natives. He went on to say, I have never seen one, but there is no doubt in my mind that there are some dinosaurs in that swamp. I have two pigmies in my church that helped kill one back in the 1950s. I ask him if that was the same story that Roy Mackal writes about in his book, *A Living Dinosaur? In Search of Mokele-Mbembe*. He said, Yes, those two pigmies were interviewed by Dr. Mackal when he was over here. They are Christians now. I myself have heard the dinosaurs at night. He said that you can hear them at night, roaring like giant lizards. That is the testimony from a missionary that has lived there for forty years. You can call him up and talk to him yourself; his address and phone number are in the back of this book.

In 1983, an expedition lead by Marcellin Agnagna, left the Brazzaville Congo, the capital of Congo, for the Congo swamp. Marcellin and his group of scientists, traveled into the swamp. He also went with Dr. Mackal on his second expedition. Marcellin said, Man, I didn't know there were dinosaurs in my own backyard! Dinosaurs just 500 miles from my house. Nobody goes into that swamp! Eugene Thomas, the missionary, told me, That swamp is uninhabited, and uninhabitable. You couldn't live there, and you wouldn't want to if you could. It's a miserable place. Marcellin, along with several of his scientists, went in there and saw one of the animals. He grabbed his camera and snapped off several pictures before he realized that he had forgotten to take off the lens cap. When you go deer hunting, they call it buck fever. I don't know what they call it when you go Mokele-Mbembe hunting. He said, I didn't get a picture, but I'll draw you a sketch.

Dr. Mackal traveled all over the swamp, and the story was the same, Oh yes, Mokele-Mbembe lives up the stream. They claim that Mokele-Mbembes migrate around eating plants as they travel on to the next place; so, they are never in the same location for an extended period.

It is not just in Africa where these stories are told. There are reports of dinosaurs still living all over the world. Not millions of them, but reports in



several locations. For example, have you ever heard of the Loch Ness Monster? The word loch means lake in Gaelic, the Celtic language of the Scottish Highlands and Ireland. Loch Ness is about twenty-four to twenty-five miles long, and about one mile wide. It is a long skinny lake in the mountains of Scotland, and because it is in the mountains, it is a very deep lake. Its in between two mountain ranges and is up to 1,000 feet deep in some places. The lake is big enough and deep enough that everybody in the world could drown in Loch Ness. Five billion people could drown in Loch Ness, and no one would show above the surface. It is a big lake.

In 1933, they cut a groove along the side of the mountain to put in a road. Because it was so steep, there was no place to put a road, so they actually chiseled a groove with dynamite into the hillside and put in a roadway. The year 1933 is a very important date. Since they put the roadway in, people could drive alongside the lake and look at the lake. Before the roadway was put in, if you wanted to see Lock Ness, you had to travel up the river seven miles, and then go into Loch Ness, and then twenty-five miles by boat. Therefore, only the local people talked about the Loch Ness Monster until 1933. Outsiders then began to see it because of the highway. In 1933, driving down that brand new highway, people began to spot the Loch Ness Monster. As of the 1960s, there were over 9,000 sightings of the Loch Ness Monster. Today, there have been over 11,000 such sightings.

Now look! If 11,000 people claim that they have seen something, I would say that there is something to what they are seeing. Some of them are probably hoaxes, frauds, or wrongly identified. No question, they may have seen an otter, a duck, a log floating, or swamp gas. I know; I have heard all of those stories, but since 11,000 people claim that they have seen it, there must be something there. It is not just all wild-eyed radical people either. There have been some very reputable people that have claimed to have seen this critter. For instance, Sir Peter Scott, a British naturalist and a member of Parliament (this is the equivalent of a US Senator, which of course, does not give him any credibility) says that he has seen the Loch Ness Monster on several occasions. He thinks the Loch Ness Monster is a plesiosaurus. A plesiosaurus? A plesiosaurus is a long-necked swimming dinosaur. There are several different kinds of plesiosaurus, including the allosaurus, and the kronosaurus. They have different shaped heads and neck lengths, etc.

Although 11,000 people have claimed to have seen this critter. some are obviously hoaxes and frauds. The Weekly World News reported, *The Loch Ness Monster Has A Baby*. After that came out, I called Scotland to talk to the lady in charge of the Loch Ness Phenomenon Investigation Bureau. I asked, Is it true that you caught the Loch Ness Monster? She said, No, I dont know how your American papers get by with publishing that kind of stuff. I said, Lady, you would not believe some of the stuff the papers publish. You know, *Adam and Eves Skeletons Found in Denver, Colorado*. Anyway, they did not catch it, but it has been seen by many folks.

Aurthor Grant, a veterinarian student was riding his motorcycle down the road at two oclock in the morning, coming home from studying, when he nearly ran into the Lock Ness Monster with his motorcycle. He said that it was scooting across the road in front of his motorcycle. Scooting across the road? Loch Ness Monster has been seen seventeen times out of the water, twice with a sheep in his mouth headed back for the water. Aurthor Grant,

being a veterinarian student, ought to have known something about animals. He said that it scooted across the road like an animal on flippers; it moved like a seal with a jerky motion. He drew the sketch shown in figure 2-20. He said, It was fifteen to twenty feet long, and looked like a plesiosaurus, but I know that it couldnt be a plesiosaurus because they have been dead for 70 million years. Thats about what Roy Mackal said in his book. He says, There is no question there are still a few dinosaurs left. It is amazing that they have survived for 70 million years. He is very convinced of his 70 million years ago theory.

Alexander Campbell is the water bailiff, thats the equivalent of a conservation officer or game warden. His job is watching Loch Ness. He has been at it for forty-seven years. In that time he says that he has seen the Loch Ness Monster eighteen times. He ought to know something about it since he has seen it eighteen times. He says the creature is about thirty feet long and his head sticks about six feet out of the water. He thinks it is a plesiosaurus. It is strange that they are all coming up with the same idea, isnt it?

The Spicer family watched it cross the road in front of their car with a sheep in its mouth. Cages were build in the 1930s in order to catch it. P. T. Barnham offered \$50,000 for the critter, dead or alive, to display in his museum. That was a lot of money back in the 1930s.

Mrs. Moir saw it for an hour, along with her sister and mother-in-law. She said that it was about thirty feet long. There are many pictures and stories, and I collect them. I dont have all 11,000, but I have numerous stories of people who have seen the Loch Ness Monster. Why would people tell these stories? Are they looking to be made fun of? All that you will get is ridicule. Why would a person report seeing it? Whats the motive? Money? People are going to laugh at them.

Torquil Macleod lived in Scotland. He watched the creature through binoculars from across the lake. Half of the creature was on shore with his neck moving back and forth like a snake that is about to strike. He watched it for nine minutes. It put one of its flippers upon shore, pushed off, and flopped into the water. After watching it for nine minutes, he drew the sketch shown in figure 2-22. Is it just a coincidence that they all come up with the same idea?

A camper took a picture (figure 2-23) in 1960, of the back and the neck sticking up. She flashed the picture, and then he ducked under the water. Greta Finlay drew the sketch shown in figure 2-24. Over and over people are coming up with the same basic idea.

In the Readers Digest book, *Mysteries of the Unexplained*, an underwater picture was shown of the flipper of the animal. It was estimated that the flipper was six feet long. They captured the photograph by placing a sonar device, cameras, and strobe lights underwater so that if anything swam in front of the camera, it would be triggered to take pictures. The water is very dirty, and visibility is zero. It is about like taking a picture in a mud puddle; the light doesnt travel very far. Loch Ness is like a giant mud puddle 900 to 1,000 feet deep. That six-foot flipper (figure 2-25) was attached to something pretty big. Here is a picture (figure 2-26) with its mouth open. There are now nearly 100 photographs of this creature, some are poor quality; some are not too bad.

People say, If the creature is really over there, why dont they get a good picture of it? That is a fair question. Let me turn it around and ask a question. Have you ever seen a picture of a car wreck as it happened? You wont either, at least not very often. There have been thousands of wrecks. It happens so fast that you say, Oh wow! Theyre going to crash! CRASH! Heres my camera. I should have gotten a picture of that! You think of it after it happened. If you are out swimming or fishing, and all of a sudden you see a dinosaur, you say, Oh wow! He is gone. I should have taken a picture. You dont think of it when it happens. I dont fault folks for not getting a good photograph. Do you have a camera with you right this second. If one crashed through your wall, and then exited the scene, you would be called a liar for the rest of your life. Right?

Three attempts have been made with submarines to record evidence and they have been unsuccessful. The water is so dirty that they could not even see the front of their own vessels so this proved to be futile. They tried yellow subs, red subs, and white subs thinking that Nessie might be attracted to a particular color. Hey, what if it would have been attracted? How would you like to be in a mini-sub with a thirty-foot long dinosaur attracted to you? Not smart. There have been lots of pictures; some may be frauds; I am not going to justify all of them. However, there have been many reputable people who have claimed to have seen this critter called the Lock Ness Monster.

It is not just Lock Ness, but many other lakes in Scotland and in Ireland are reporting these creatures. There are apparently a family of plesiosaurs still living over there which, as a Bible believing Christian, makes perfect sense. There probably are some dinosaurs still alive in the world. Even in the English channels, in the North Sea, and in Sweden, there have been sightings by hundreds of witnesses. In the 1800s, the Swedes built big traps and harpoons to try to catch one and get the critters out of the lake. In 1905, off the coast of Brazil, a dinosaur swam past a boat load of scientists. One scientist said, Hey fellows, what is he doing out here? Thats a dinosaur! Hes been dead for 70 million years. They forgot to tell that one. What do you do with that?

A Japanese fishing boat caught one in 1977. They caught a dinosaur? Figure 2-27 is a picture of a rotting plesiosaurus carcass. As they were dragging their net 900 feet down off the coast of New Zealand, the Japanese fishing fleet snagged a 4,000 pound, 32-foot long carcass of a rotting dinosaur. The fishermen on board said, Man, we have never seen anything that looks like this. They took tissue samples, weighed it, and measured it, and said, Boss, this thing stinks! Its rotten! If you think that we are going to haul 4,000 pounds of rotten meat from New Zealand to Japan going 20 mph, youre mistaken, so they threw it back. It made big news all over the world except in America. We didnt hear anything about it, but it happened in 1977. The Japanese even made a commemorative mail stamp (figure 2-28) out of it.

A dinosaur? It fits the Bible account just fine. The Russian words at the top of figure 2-29 say, Riddle or Mystery Lake. You can read more about this in the Readers Digest, *Mysteries of the Unexplained*. A group of scientists went to the Soviet Union and actually saw the creature in the middle of the lake. They drew a sketch of what they saw. Dinosaurs in

Siberia? I could believe it, and its not because that I am some kind of nut. Its because I believe the Bible, and it just makes sense. The world is not millions of years old.

I interviewed a Canadian fisherman (figure 2-30) for an hour. He said that a dinosaur of sorts chased their boat off the coast of Nova Scotia for two miles. He said, Look, Ive been fishing out here for years. I dont know what it was. It was something with a huge jaw about eight or nine feet long. The jaw eight or nine feet long! I have the interview on audio tape.

There have been many sightings of these creatures on Lake Okanagan in Canada. Statues have been built in their parks for the children to play on them. They call him Ogopogo. Over 1,000 people claim to have seen Ogopogo in Canada. There must be something to it. What do you do? You can either deny them and say they are all liars, and you can say that it is a tourist trap to get more tourists to Lake Okanagan in Canada. Some of the sightings may be for that purpose. I am not attempting to justify all of them. However, when thousands upon thousands report sightings (20,000 reported sightings of dinosaurs in this century) there are just too many to discount.

In Cadboro Bay, British Columbia, a creature has been sighted called Caddy. Three to four hundred sightings of the creature have been reported in the Potomac in Washington, D.C. and in Lake Erie. The article, *Eries Besse matches Nessie* (figure 2-31) tells the story of one such sighting. A dinosaur in Lake Erie? John Craft took a picture of it (figure 2-32.) He saw the critter, along with his wife and mother-in-law and someone else that was with him, and photographed it. When I talked to him, he said, Brother Hovind, I dont know what the critter was. It looked like a dinosaur. Just when I was going to take a picture of the sunset, my wife said, Whats that! She said that it looked like a whole row of men swimming. I swung the camera over, but by then it had put its head back down and was swimming with just his back out of the water. Thats when I snapped the photograph.

The article shown in figure 2-33, *Californias Nessie*, appeared in the November 1989 issue of the Skin Diver magazine. In 1925 just south of San Francisco, in Monterey, California, something washed up on the beach . As it lay there on the beach and rotted away, no one thought to save any of it, at least no one that I could find. They said that it was forty feet long, and the neck was twenty feet long. A twenty-foot long neck? Many people came to examine it like Mr. Wallace, a Santa Cruz resident, who was president of the Natural History Society of British Columbia. He said, My examination of the monster was quite thorough. It had no teeth. Its head was large, and its neck was fully twenty feet long. I would call it a type of plesiosaurus. Plesiosaurus, in California in 1925? I could buy that, no problem. There might even be a few zeuglodon left. A zeuglodon or basilasaurus is a long skinny dinosaur that looks like an alligator but with only two front feet and no back feet. It has a long tail and two front flippers.

There are over 300 people that claim that they have seen the White River Monster in New Port, Arkansas. The picture shown in figure 2-35 is of the White River Monster; a creature that is said to be thirty feet long. I have interviewed several people that say they have seen the creature. One such interview was with Gary Addington and Lloyd Hamilton about their sightings. Today, they live in Jacksonport, Arkansas. I called Cloyce Warren, the man who took the photograph, and he said, Mr. Hovind, we took

some good pictures of that animal because everybody was laughing at us. We fished the river all the time, and we told people that there was a thirty-foot long animal in the river. People would say to them, Yeah, right! Sure there is! What have you been drinking out there? He went on to say, We got several good pictures of it one time. We left the film in the camera, and took it down to the newspaper office, the Newport Daily Independent. We told them that the film was still in the camera and had not been opened yet. I didnt want to be accused of doctoring the film. I told them to develop the film and print the pictures in the paper. I dont know who did it, but someone at the newspaper office didnt realize that it was color film, and developed it with black and white developer, and ruined the whole role. They said, Cloyce, guess what? We messed up. He said, Ill try to get another picture, but its a rare opportunity to get a picture. Thirty-foot dinosaurs in Arkansas? It hasnt been seen since 1972 when a flood came and an enormous amount of mud washed into the river. The river used to be 100 feet deep; today, it is only 50 feet deep.

In between the state of Vermont and New York, there is a huge lake, Lake Champlain, named after Samuel Champlain, the French explorer that discovered it. The Indians told Samuel Champlain, Dont go out on the lake. The water horse will get you. He said, The water horse? They said, Oh, there is a big animal that lives in the lake. The Indians were afraid of it. Lake Champlain is 120 miles long, 15 miles wide, and 500 feet deep. Ive been skiing on it; it is a big lake. All along Lake Champlain there have been hundreds and hundreds of sightings of a creature called Champ. You can read more about this in the book, *Champ*, by Joseph W. Zarzynsky (figure 2-38). I talked to Joseph. He says that he has been collecting sighting information on Champ for seventeen years. He said to me, Mr. Hovind, there is no question in my mind that there are still a few dinosaurs left, and weve got some in Lake Champlain just like the Loch Ness Monster. He then said, Secondly, its pretty surprising that they have survived for 70 million years, isnt it? No, Joseph, they did not; well, we wont get into all of that. The world is not 70 million years old.

I interviewed, Sandy Mansi from New Hampshire, who took the picture that is on the front of Joseph Zarzynskys book, *Champ*. When I was preaching in New Hampshire at another time, she came and heard me speak. She said, Mr. Hovind, youre the first person that I have ever heard talk about dinosaurs who tries to use them for the glory of God. I said, Sandy, could I see your picture? She said, Oh yes. She showed me the photograph that she took of Champ. It was clear as a bell. I said tell me about it please. She said, My husband and I were standing at the edge of Lake Champlain on the Vermont side, and our two children were playing in the water. All of a sudden, we noticed this turbulence in the water, and then it slowly came up. It was looking around from right to left. It looked kind of nervous. We watched it for ten minutes. My husband handed me the camera. I dropped to my knees because my legs just buckled out from under me, but I snapped off one picture. We were looking at a dinosaur. I looked at the picture through a magnifying glass, and I said, Sandy, what would you charge me for a copy of this picture. She said, Oh, you couldnt afford it. People have paid me up to \$10,000 for permission to use it. It appeared in Time magazine in 1981. I have never heard anyone talk about dinosaurs

who wants to use them for the glory of the Lord. Im a Christian, and I would like to give you one of my pictures for your display.

Hundreds of people have seen it. Lee Smith videotaped it for nearly a minute. I went to Lee Smiths house, south of Ticonderoga, New York. He was the county road superintendent or worked on a bulldozer or something like that. He was in a lighthouse when he videotaped it for nearly a minute. I said, Lee, could I please see the video? He said, Oh sure. He showed it to me. I said, Lee, what would you charge me to make a copy of this tape? I would like to use it. He said, Oh, you can have one. His little boy was with him and said, Its a shark! There is white things coming out of his mouth. Evidently the animal was breathing out, and it was making steam-like vapor much like a whale. I have included this video at the end of my seminar tape number two.

Many people have seen these critters, and they are not all lunatics. There must be something to it. The whole problem is how you look from the beginning. What is your preconception?

There might even be a few pterodactyls left. There is the story of a giant bird that came down and snatched away the Indians north of Alton, Illinois the piasa bird. It was probably a giant pterodactyl that snatched an Indian baby and the legend grew out of proportion. In 1882, two cowboys shot and killed a pterodactyl in Arizona. They said, Folks are not going to believe us. A thirteen-foot bird in the desert of Arizona? They cut the wing tips off and took them back to the local bar and said, Fellows, weve just shot a thirteen-foot bird. Here is part of his wing. There were no feathers, just skin. Leathery wings?

There are several swamps in Africa that are still reporting creatures like pterodactyls. If you draw a picture of a pterodactyl and show it to the natives, they will say, Oh yes, thats Kongamato. He lives out there. Kongamato? Yes, he has a five- to seven-foot wing span. They are not as big as they used to be. The fifty footers couldnt fly in todays atmosphere. The air is too thin, but a five- to seven-footer would have no problem. Im not saying that there are millions, but there are a few isolated spots where there are some still left. Pterodactyls still alive!

The purpose of all of this is not to have you say, Oh! Wow! Neat! Dinosaurs may still be alive! I have several motives. Number one, I want to strengthen your faith in the Word of God. Christians have taken a beating over the dinosaur issue for the last 100 years because they havent known what to do with the evolutionist theories. Dinosaurs are mentioned right in the Bible, and some may still be around. What I want to see happen is the same thing that happened to Job. After God finished talking to Job, He asked him eighty-four questions, and showed him two dinosaurs, Behemoth in chapter 40, and Leviathan in chapter 41. Then in chapter 42, Job answered the Lord.

Look what happened to Job. Job was a good, righteous man, and it made him kind of proud. Im a good guy. I dont drink, smoke, cuss, or chew, and I dont go with girls that do. God was done with him now, and he left. Chapter 42, verse 1 through 6 says, ***Then Job answered the LORD, and said, I know that thou canst do every thing, and that no thought can be withholden from thee. Who is he that hideth counsel without knowledge? Therefore have I uttered that I understood not; things***

***too wonderful for me, which I knew not. Hear, I beseech thee, and I will speak: I will demand of thee, and declare thou unto me. I have heard of thee by the hearing of the ear: but now mine eye seeth thee. Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes.*** Repent? Of what did Job have to repent? Job didnt commit adultery. Job hadnt stolen anything. He hadnt lied, but he still had to repent. You see; Job got a good glimpse at who God is, and it made him realize how small he was. I think that if we had a glimpse of a dinosaur, it would make us realize that we are not such hot stuff after all. I think that God used the dinosaurs to get to Jobs heart. Say Job, you need to humble yourself, son. You need to serve me. We need some Christians that will humble themselves and say, God, if you are big enough to make the dinosaurs, and you are big enough to make this world, then you are big enough to run my life. What do you want me to do, Father?

Look, there is a war going on. It is time we get more volunteers. Maybe God doesnt want you to be a preacher. Maybe God doesnt want you to be an evangelist. He might want you to teach a Sunday School class, drive a bus, or just fill up your car with children and bring them to church every week. I dont know what God has for you. Maybe you ought to start a ministry. Maybe you ought to get a puppet house, make some dinosaur puppets and travel around to churches all over your area and do seminars on dinosaurs. Hi boys and girls. Im a dinosaur. I did not live millions of years ago. Dont let them tell you that in school boys and girls. Just give the Children the truth! God ought to get the glory for the dinosaurs, not the devil! Maybe you could start a business where you make dinosaur cakes and put on birthday parties for children. Ask God what he wants you to do. Charge \$50 to have twenty children come over and do a dinosaur party and teach them the truth. Children love dinosaurs. The devil is using it as hard as he can. It is important to get thousands of Christians involved in it. Look, we are missing the opportunity. Im afraid that when we get to heaven, we are going to look back on our life and say, Awe man, look what I could have done. The saddest words, It could have been. What could you have done with your life? If you added up all of the money that you have wasted in your life, how much would it be? If you had all the time back that you have wasted in your life, how much would it be? Okay, you cant get it back, but you can stop wasting it starting now.

I hope that you get uncomfortable in not doing anything for the Lord. There is a war going on. If you are not going to shoot, you should at least carry bullets, take care of the wounded, or do something.

# Chapter 3

## *Leviathan: The Fire-Breathing Dragon*

This chapter continues with the story of Job. Remember that God spoke to Job in chapters 38 through 41. He asked Job a total of 84 questions, which Job did not answer. Job chapter 41 is the last chapter in which God spoke to Job. Starting in Job 1:1, the Bible says, ***Canst thou draw out Leviathan with an hook? or his tongue with a cord which thou lettest down?*** Now, wait a minute! What is a Leviathan? Your center reference Bible may state that Leviathan is a crocodile, a whirlpool, or a whale. Take your pen and mark though it because it cannot be any of those. Do not become excited just remember, the words of God are inspired, but the notes are not.. I believe that Leviathan is a Tyrannosaurus Rex. You say, Mr. Hovind, a Tyrannosaurus Rex??? Yep! A dinosaur in the Bible? Oh, yes. As I said in chapter 2, dinosaurs have always been with man. They did not live millions of years ago.

When I was in the seventh grade, (I cant remember if it was the third or fourth time), my friend David, from Peoria, Illinois, came to visit. We were horsing around, as kids do, on a hot July afternoon. David had ridden his bike over to my house, and we played around until almost dark. It was too late for him to make it home before dark and I said, David, do not worry about it. I will go talk to my mom. I said, Look, Mom, we need to get David and his bike back home, but there is not enough room in the Volkswagen to put a five-speed bike, plus he doesnt have time to ride it home before dark. Would you let me sit on the bike and hang on to the side of the car while you drive down the highway to Davids house? Its only about four miles away. Mom said, Absolutely not! That is the dumbest idea that I have ever heard in my life. Kids will understand how this goes. If you beg your parents long enough, you can just about talk them into anything. You just keep begging and begging and usually they cave into the pressure. You say, Awe, come on Mom! Come on! Come on Mom, please, just this once! She said, You want me to pull you down the highway while you sit on the bike, and hang on to the side of the car? I said, Mom, I do it with my big brothers all the time. Looking back on it now, I realize that they were trying to kill me, but I didnt know that at the time. I thought that it was fun, hanging on to the side of the car going down the highway at 35 mph. Well, reluctantly, and against her better judgment, my mom finally said, Okay, I dont know why Im doing this, but lets go. I sat on the bike and held on to the side of the Volkswagen. We were heading down Highway 150 toward Morton, Illinois. As we were moving along about 30 to 35 mph, everything was going fine. My hair was streaming back, tears were coming out of my eyes, and my ears were flapping in the breeze. There was no problem, until the chain came off the bike. The chain became tangled up in the back wheel, which caused the back wheel to stop turning. Before I could think about it, the bike had gone out from under me. I tried frantically to run 35 mph! Immediately, I



discovered that I could not do it. So, down I went into the gravel on the side of the highway, but I did not or could not let go of the handle of the Volkswagen. So, my mom was dragging me along in the gravel on the side of the highway about 30 mph. My mom had been frequently looking over to see how I was doing. She looked over this one time and I was gone. She thought, Hes gone! I bet he fell down. That is the way that I have always fallen - down that is. She said, Oh no! He might go under the back wheels of the Volkswagen! So, very wisely she swerved over to the left to keep from running over me, except I was still hanging on to the side of the car. Now, instead of dragging me through the gravel, she began to drag me through the hot, bubbly blacktop, smearing tar all over my seventh grade carcass that was now scratched to smithereens.

They took me to the hospital. We were known very well - we had been there many times. We had done many dumb things before but this was one of the dumbest. The doctor came in and looked at me and said, What happened to this kid? My mom told him the story, and he just shook his head like, Oh brother! The doctor said to the nurse that was with him, Nurse, I would like for you to go get Bertha, Gertrude, Matilda, and Zelda. A few minutes later, four of the biggest nurses in the world came through the door. I mean huge! The doctor told them one by one, Bertha, you hold his right leg; Gertrude, you hold his left leg; Matilda, you hold his left arm; and Zelda, you hold his right arm. One by one, they pinned me to the table. The doctor then got out a bucket of scalding hot water. He then put in about a half a cup of sulfphysohex soap, and then he added something in there to dissolve the tar. He got out a regular old scrub brush, and I thought, Awe no! Hes not going to rub that on me, is he? Yes, he was going to rub that on me. It was a regular old scrub brush just like the one Mom had under the sink at home. I thought, No, this is a hospital, surely they have some fancy equipment. He dipped the brush into the hot sudsy solution, and said, Ladies, hang on! For the next twenty minutes (it seemed like twenty years), he scrubbed on my little seventh grade carcass. Now, I want you to know that I tried frantically to kick those fat ladies off, but I just couldnt do it. They outweighed me about 300 to 1; it was very unfair; totally against the Olympic rules; and they did not seem to care. After about 30 minutes, in spite of my kicking and hollering, the doctor had succeeded in cleaning me up for the most part. So, he said to one of the nurses, Okay, hes done. Wrap him up and send him home. So, they wrapped me up and sent me home.

Now, I want you to promise that what I am about to reveal to you will not be revealed to any of the fat nurses that are left in this world. They missed a spot. I still have today, 28 years later, cinders in my elbow. Skin has grown them over now and I have no intention having them taken out. Its kind of weird to have cinders in your elbow, but if you think that Im going to go back to the hospital and let those fat ladies hold me down while the doctor scrubs them out, youre mistaken. You see, I can run faster now, and by the time they could catch me; they would be too skinny to hold me down on the table. I am going to leave them in there for the rest of my life. You see, someday the worms can take them out when they disassemble this carcass if they dont like them, but I have no intention of having it done myself.

The problem that I see in America is that we have a lot of Christians with sin in their heart and in their lives, and they have no intention of fixing it. I

have an impurity in my elbow, and I have no intention of fixing it. Its a whole different story when people regard iniquity in their heart. The Bible says if you regard iniquity in your heart the Lord will not hear you (Psalm 66:18.) Is your heart clean? That is the question that I want you to think about as you see what God was doing with Job as He asked him 84 questions.

Job was a good, godly, righteous man, but Job had a problem with pride, and God intended to fix it. As God was speaking to Job in the forty-first chapter He said, ***Canst thou draw out Leviathan with an hook? or his tongue with a cord which thou lettest down?*** Now wait a minute! A Leviathan? As I said before, I believe that Leviathan was a Tyrannosaurus Rex. Tyrannosauruses are one of the rarest dinosaurs. Only twelve or thirteen have been found, and only nine of them had a scull on them. If you want to make money, go out and dig around your yard until you find a Tyrannosaurus Rex skeleton. Museums will pay just about any price to get one. They are extremely valuable.

Tyrannosaurus was a fairly large dinosaur which came in a variety of sizes. The biggest one that has been found was twenty-four feet tall. His head was a little smaller than a Volkswagen. He had teeth up to nine inches long. His back leg was ten feet high, thats even with the rim on a basketball goal. Thats a big lizard! God said to Job, ***Canst thou draw out Leviathan with an hook?*** Draw out Leviathan with a hook? Man, the biggest ones probably weighed 20 to 30 tons. No! You cant draw out Leviathan with a hook. Who uses 30-ton test line when they go fishing anyway? Suppose that you did. You are out there fishing and snag something heavy; you pull and pull, and up out of the water comes a 24-foot tall, 50-foot long, 30-ton Tyrannosaurus with a hook in his lip leading to a string that goes down to your pole; he may seem a little bit upset. He slowly walks over to your boat, and says, Hey, is this yours? You say, No sir, Mr. Tyrannosaurus! Ive never seen that hook before in my life. I believe that is my brothers hook. No, you dont draw out a Leviathan with a hook.

As I stated in chapter 2, the questions that God asked Job were not designed to get answers. The questions were designed to change his attitude. Job is getting an attitude adjustment. God said to Job, Can you draw out Leviathan with a hook, or his tongue with a string which you let down?

In this passage of Job chapter 41, God describes all sorts of things about Leviathan. Lets take a closer look at some of those things. Job 41:5a states, ***Wilt thou play with him as with a bird?*** Yea, right! Whrrrt, whrrrt, whrrrt, perch right here. Yea, all 30 tons, right! You would be road pizza when he was done with you. Job 41:5b states, ***...or wilt thou bind him for thy maidens?*** Hey Job, tie him up and bring him to your daughters to play with at home. You had better have a lot of spare daughters. Job 41:6a says, ***Shall the companions make a banquet of him?*** In other words, Job have you ever been invited over for Tyrannosaurus burgers? Look at the last part of verse 6, ***...shall they part him among the merchants?*** Now folks, this is proof positive these critters were hard to kill. If anybody would have them for sale, it would be a Jewish merchant. Job 41:7-8, ***Canst thou fill his skin with barbed irons? or his head with fish spears? Lay thine hand upon him, remember the battle, do no more.*** I love verse eight. I think

it means, Job, go ahead and grab him; its the last thing that you'll ever do. Do no more! Job 41:9, ***Behold, the hope of him is in vain: shall not one be cast down even at the sight of him?*** Just looking at him would scare you to death. Now verse 10 is the point of the whole passage, ***None is so fierce that dare stir him up: who then is able to stand before me?*** God says, Job, look at Leviathan. Can you draw him out with a hook? No. Hes big, hes strong, he has a big head, big teeth, he is really big! God says, Job youre afraid of him, arent you? Job says, Yes, Im afraid of him. In verse 10 at the end, God says, ***...who then is able to stand before me?***

You see, God was using Leviathan to get Job thinking about a big ferocious animal, and then God said, Job, hes big, isnt he? Yep! God said, Are you scared of me Job, like you are of Leviathan? You see, Job had a problem, and its the same problem that we have. We dont have a good fear of God. In America, we simply dont care what God thinks. It doesnt matter what God says; we are going to do it our way. It is illustrated throughout our lives that we dont have a good fear of God.

Let me give you an example. Would you be interested if I could save you \$50,000? I took one of my kids to the dentist one time when he was about six or seven years old. The dentist said, Mr. Hovind, this kid has a cavity. I said, Yes sir, I know about that. Are you talking about the big one in his head or the one in his tooth? He said, Well, just the one in his tooth. Thats the one we are going to fix today. I said, Okay, lets fix it Doc. Then I said, Now son, youve got to sit still. The dentist has to give you a shot. He says, A SHOT! A SHOT! I said, Yes, hes going to give you a shot. Calm down; Ive had one before. I showed him where I had mine. I said, Its no problem. When he gives you the shot, your mouth will go numb so he can drill out the bad part and fill the hole with silver. He says, Daddy, hes going to give me a SHOT! I said, Yes son, hes going to give you a shot. Now, listen carefully. SIT STILL! If you wiggle, Im going to have to take you outside and spank you, so, dont -- wiggle! He did his best. He tried to sit still, but when the doctor pulled out that giant needle about twelve feet long, and poured in about eighteen gallons of Novocain, and said, Okay kid, open up, he freaked. Have you ever seen a kid freak out; I mean completely lose control in a dentists chair? He lost it. He was screaming and hollering and yelling. Well, the doctor called the nurse, and the nurse sat on him, the doctor sat on him, and I sat on him. We tried to hold him still, but we couldnt hold him still enough for that kind of operation. I dont think that Gertrude and her tribe could have held him still enough for that.

Finally, after a few minutes the doctor gave up and said, I cant work on this kid. Im sorry, I just cant do it. I said, Doc, let me take him outside and talk to him for a few minutes. We went out to the parking lot, got in the old Chevy van and sat in the back seat. I said, Son, listen carefully. You know that I love you. He said, I know daddy. I said, Now son, I told you to sit still. You did not sit still. What happens when you disobey daddy? He said, Sniff, sniff... I get a spanking? I said, Correct, bend over. Boy, did I give him a spanking, and it was a doozy. A few minutes later, smoke was rising off his hind end, tears were coming out of his eyes, and pearls were coming out of his nostrils -- the whole thing. I said, Okay son, listen carefully. We are going to go back into the dentist office, and you are going to sit in that chair. If you wiggle one time, Im not going to yell at you and Im not going to

scream at you. Im going to calmly take you back out here to the van, and Im going to give you two spankings just like the one you just received. Then, we are going to go back into the dentist office, and you are going to sit in the chair. If you wiggle, we are going to come back out to the van, and you are going to get three spankings just like the one you just got. Son, we are going to go back and forth all day long until I get tired, and I have played tennis for years. I have a wonderful forehand smash. I dont believe Ill get tired for a long time, son. I believe that he knew that, and I knew that.

We went back into the dentist office. That kid sat in the chair. The dentist said, Open your mouth. He opened his mouth. The dentist said, Open it wider. He held it open real wide, and I said, Son, sit still. He looked over at me, then he looked at that dentist with that giant needle. He started to shake; then he looked at me again. As he gripped the chair, he did not move a muscle. I dont think the kid even breathed for twenty minutes. The doctor gave him the shot; drilled it out; filled the tooth full of silver; and we were on our way out the door in fifteen or twenty minutes. It wasnt long at all. The doctor then said, Mr. Hovind, come here. I said, Yes sir? He said, Look, I dont know what you said to that kid while you were outside, but I would like for you to work for me. I said, No sir, you dont want me to work for you, the Child Welfare would have me in jail in a flash.

You know; its very simple. The second time that we were in the dentists office, the kid was still scared of the dentist; no question about it. He was scared, but he was more scared of me than anything else in the world at that time. You say, Mr. Hovind, how does that save me \$50,000? Ah, keep reading.

I often pick up hitchhikers. I picked up a hitchhiker one time who said, Hey, do you mind if I smoke in your car? I said, Yes I do because after you get out, the smell stays in my car, and I practically live in my car. I drive over 1,000 miles per week. He said, Okay, no problem. I said, Tell me, how much do those cigarettes cost anyway. He said, Awe man, cigarettes, theyre about a \$1.75 a pack. Obviously this was a few years ago. I said, How many packs do you smoke every day? He said, I smoke two and one-half packs a day. So, I got out my calculator, and punched in  $2.5 \times 1.75$ . I said, Do you do this every day? He said, Every day. I punched in  $4.375 \times 365$ . I said, How long have you been doing this? He said, Ive been doing this for 35 years. I punched in  $1596.875 \times 35$ . That equals \$55,890.63. I showed him the calculator, and I said, Sir, you have spent \$50,000 on -- smoke! You have made your own cloud. A \$50,000 cloud. Youve spent enough money to buy two Corvettes. It would buy about a half corvette today. I said, You have spent enough money to buy all kinds of Volkswagens, Toyotas, Hondas, skateboards, and roller skates; but you decided to spend it on -- a cloud. You have spent \$50,000, and now you are standing on the street with your thumb out, asking me for a ride. I went on to say, You really ought to stop and think this through one more time. Tell me, when did you smoke your first one? He said, Well, I was about thirteen years old when I smoked my first one. I said, Tell me sir, why did you smoke the first one? Would you like to guess what he said? He said, I was with my friends. Thats why everybody smokes the first one.

Do you know what his problem was? When he was thirteen years old, he was more afraid of his friends than he was of God. Because he was more

afraid of his friends than he was of God, it had already cost him \$50,000 and its not over yet. Wait until he begins to die from the cigarette habit and see what its going to cost him. This is just the beginning. Fifty-thousand dollars, not to mention lost wages and medical bills later on in life.

Do you know what our problem is? We are more afraid of our friends than we are of God. Thats why kids get in trouble, and do dumb things like take drugs, or drink, or smoke. They are more afraid of everything else than they are of God. I believe Job had that problem. God said, Job, youre afraid of Leviathan, arent you? Job is thinking, Yes, Im afraid of Leviathan. God said, Who is able to stand before me? Job was learning a very important lesson -- you need to fear God above all else.

Verse 15 talks about this animal having scales. Job 41:15-16 states, ***His scales are his pride, shut up together as with a close seal. One is so near to another, that no air can come between them.*** He had scales! Now, wait a minute! Some Bibles say that it was a whirlpool. Whirlpools do not have scales. Some Bibles say that it was a whale. Whales also do not have scales. A whale is a mammal; it has skin and hair. Baby whales are born alive under water. By the way, they have to nurse under water also. That makes it pretty tough to breathe and nurse at the same time, and a baby whale drinks 2,000 pounds of milk every day (thats utterly ridiculous). Anyway, it was not a whale; it was an animal with scales. Verse number 17 says, ***They are joined one to another, they stick together, that they cannot be sundered.*** Now read verse 18 very carefully. You are going to think that I am crazy. I did not write this; I am just quoting what God has written; so, dont blame me. Verse 18 says, ***By his neesings...*** Neesings! What on earth is that? When the translators came across the Hebrew word, ATISH, they said, Fellows, what are we going to do with this word? The word means to blow air out of your nose -- neesing. There was no word to say that, so they made up a brand new word. This is the only place that it occurs in the Bible. It is never mentioned again. Its sort of like sneezing, but sneezing is involuntary. Neesing is voluntary; so, they decided to make up a brand new word and call it neesing. Look at more of verse 18, ***By his neesings a light doth shine...*** What? When he neeses, a light shines? Do you mean to tell me that when he blows air out a light shines? Just keep reading it gets worse, ***By his neesings a light doth shine, and his eyes are like the eyelids of the morning.*** Verse 19, ***Out of his mouth go burning lamps, and sparks of fire leap out.*** Awe no! Come on, Mr. Hovind! Is this a fire-breathing dragon or something? Just keep reading; it gets worse. Verse 20a, ***Out of his nostrils goeth smoke...*** Now that is no big deal; Ive seen deacons do that on the front step of churches before. Lets continue, verse 20 and 21, ***Out of his nostrils goeth smoke, as out of a seething pot or caldron. His breath kindleth coals, and a flame goeth out of his mouth.*** A flame out of his mouth? Come on, Mr. Hovind! Was this a fire-breathing dragon of some kind? Surely, you dont believe in fire-breathing dragons do you? Well, yes I do.

Before you become excited, let me tell you the four reasons that I believe in fire-breathing dragons. My first reason why I believe in fire-breathing dragons is that the Bible plainly states it as fact. It says that Leviathan could breathe fire. There is no way around reading that passage. Thats what it says! You can try to misinterpret it, but the obvious interpretation is

-- the animal could breathe fire. Some people say, This has to be some sort of mythological animal or this is just a type of Satan. I understand that Satan is called a dragon. Wait a minute, it isn't valid to say that Satan is like Leviathan or the dragon if there was never an animal in existence for comparison. The devil is also called a roaring lion, and there really are roaring lions. The devil is called a serpent, and there really are serpents. So, there really was a dragon. Now, I understand that this could be a type of Satan, but there had to be such an animal that really existed to used for comparison. So, my first reason is: the Bible says that Leviathan could breathe fire.

My second reason is because of all the historical evidence. There are so many stories from countries around the world of animals breathing fire. In every culture of the world that talked about these animals, there was always a dragon that breathed fire. Prince George slew a dragon. St. John slew a dragon. Beowulf slew a dragon. If they are all just making up stories, if its just mythology, isnt it coincidental that all the different cultures relate the same story about fire-breathing dragons? If they are all making up an animal, why are they picking the same animal? Why didnt somebody have a fire-breathing hamster or something else? Everybody made it a dragon. That seems to be a little more than coincidence to me. It must have been a real animal that they were discussing.

My third reason for believing in fire-breathing dragons is: it is possible to blow fire. You say, WHAT? Yep! Its possible. There is an insect that lives in South Florida and in Central America that is called the Bombardier Beetle. This is a picture of the Bombardier Beetle (figure 3-3). It shows this Bombardier Beetle with a drop of wax on his back. He was glued with a paper clip waxed onto a stand so he would cooperate for the photographer. He could not move, and it did not hurt him. He just had wax on his shell. The photographer reached up with a pair of tweezers and pinched the beetles leg. When that happened the beetle thought, Ah ha! Its my arch enemy, the ant! Hes biting on my leg again. That guy never learns. Back near the beetles rear end he has a special cannon that he aims at his enemies when they bite on his legs. POOF! He burns his enemies. He has a flame thrower back there. He is sometimes called *The Fire-Breathing Beetle*, or the *Blister Bug*. The chemicals that come out reach 212° F, which is the temperature of boiling water. Well, where does a beetle get something that is 212° F.? What does he have back there, a furnace or something? Nope! The way that it works is relatively simple.

The Bombardier Beetle has two chemicals in storage compartments in his rear end. The chemicals are hydrogen peroxide and hydroquinone. When these two chemicals are mixed together, they explode. BOOM! Its called an exothermic reaction. When they explode, they instantly give off an enormous amount of heat. The beetle stores them together in a pouch (figure 3-4) but they dont explode -- which is a good thing. The beetle doesnt want them to explode in his rear end because that would be very uncomfortable. He has a third chemical that is mixed in there with them. The third chemical is called the inhibitor. The inhibitor prevents the explosion from taking place by neutralizing the first two chemicals. Now, he has three chemicals mixed in there, and they do not do a blooming thing! He sprays it on his enemies, they lick it off, and continue chewing his leg off;

so, just the three wont work. He has a fourth chemical. The fourth chemical is in the outer chamber. He squirts it in at the very last possible second. The fourth chemical is the neutralizer. The neutralizer eliminates the inhibitor so the first two chemicals can explode. Is this too complicated? The beetle has four chemicals. The first two explode, the third one makes them not explode, and the fourth takes away the third one so the first two can explode. Now, timing is very important to the beetle! If he forgets to put the inhibitor in just one time, hes history! If he puts the neutralizer in too soon, hes history, and folks, I would like you to know that it took the beetle billions of years of evolution to figure this out. This really is -- complex chemistry. So, for billions of years, as they were evolving, you would hear them exploding in the jungle in the middle of the night as they practiced their chemistry. (BOOM!) They would gather together for the funeral, and grandma would say, Hey kids, take a look at your uncle Herman. Do you want to die like that boys and girls? Look at him good! He blew his whole hind end right off! No, grandma. I dont want to die like that. Well then, stop goofing off in school, and pay attention to that teacher! Study that chemistry because someday we are going to be *Fire-Breathing Beetles*. We have to keep evolving. We have to keep working on it. It took them billions of years of slow, gradual evolution, and they finally, miraculously, made it. Im not sure which one made it first, but evidently, hes the only one that had kids because now, all of them can blow fire. If you believe that Bombardier Beetles evolved by gradual change you are in serious need of psychiatric treatment.

They did not evolve gradually. The beetle doesnt know anything about chemistry. Nothing! Hes never even been to kindergarten. His whole body is less than an inch long. His brain is even smaller. All that he knows is if something bites him on his leg, FLASH, he squirts him, and they will leave -- if they are able. It even works on bigger enemies. Figure 3-5 a picture of a Bombardier Beetle that is about to be eaten by a toad. Figure 3-6 shows the beetle in the toads mouth. Figure 3-7 shows the beetle is back out; the toads tongue is actually laying on the floor to cool off, and you can hear him say, Call the cook quick! Too many jalapeños on that one! WOW! So, my third reason for believing in fire-breathing dragons is: it is possible for them to produce fire.

I have a fourth reason for believing in fire-breathing dragons. Some of these dinosaurs had weird, hollow, bony things on the back of their heads; for example, the Parasaurolophus, the Lambiasaur and the Headrosaur. These weird, hollow bony things on the back of their heads were connected to their sinuses or their nasal passages (figure 3-8). Scientists have always wondered, What are those hollow things on the back of their heads? They were actually enlargements of the sinuses. Scientists have always made up stories about their intended usage.. One textbook states, *It is possible that the air passages magnified the voices of the dinosaurs like the curved tubes of a trumpet. Loud voices might be very useful for calling other dinosaurs or scaring predators away.* Oh yea! Thats what they had them for, so they could call louder, Come home for dinner honey! This could be true but I believe since many of the dinosaur heads had these cavities (even the head of the Tyrannosaurus Rex was largely hollow), they could have stored chemicals in these cavities. The entire January 1993 issue of *Discovery*

*Magazine* was devoted to the *Air-Headed Dinosaur*. The head of the Tyrannosaurs Rex was largely hollow and was connected to air passages -- all going to his sinus cavities. Which means, whatever was in the cavity could be sprayed out of his nose or his mouth at will, or at anybody. It wouldn't have to be at Will; it could have been you; he didn't care. The point is, he could spray whatever was in the cavity out of his mouth. I suspect that Leviathan could breathe fire. I think that he stored chemicals in the hollow cavity and actually burned his enemies. There are many legends that validate this theory. These animals were probably one of the first to become extinct after the flood because those who figured out how to kill one probably became a hero.

Let's look closer at this fire-breathing dragon, Leviathan. In Job 41:30-31 the Bible says, ***Sharp stones are under him: he spreadeth sharp pointed things upon the mire. He maketh the deep to boil like a pot: he maketh the sea like a pot of ointment.*** People say, Wait a minute! The deep, the sea, that animal lives in the water. It can't be a Tyrannosaurus Rex. Wait, wait, wait! It certainly could be. Most of the other references to Leviathan refer to him as being in the sea. There are several references to him, (Psalm 74:14, Psalm 104:26, and Isaiah 27:1) as being in the sea, but since it isn't practical to breathe fire under water, I believe that the critter could go on land or water. There are many species of animals that can stay on land or water, whichever they choose.

If you were fifty-foot long, had a head a little smaller than a Volkswagen, had teeth six to nine inches long, had scales that nobody could poke through with a spear, weighed nearly thirty tons, and on top of that you could breathe fire, you could go wherever you wanted to go. So, Leviathan, I believe, was Mr. T.

Verse 32-34, ***He maketh a path to shine after him; one would think the deep to be hoary. Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear. He beholdeth all high things: he is a king over all the children of pride.*** Pride! Let's continue into chapter 42, ***Then Job answered the LORD...*** Ah ha! Finally, Job is going to say something. It has been four chapters, eighty-four questions, and two dinosaurs in the last four chapters. Before we look at what Job says let's look at the last thing God said. The last thing God said was, ***...he is a king over all the children of pride.*** God then left. He is done talking. I think God left Job thinking about his real problem. Job wasn't into vile sin. He wasn't committing adultery. He wasn't beating his wife or kids. He was a good, godly righteous man, but he had a problem with pride. The same problem that all of us have. Then God said to Job, Job, he's the king of the children of pride.

Let's just talk about pride for a minute. The Bible says that there are four things that cause pride. They are listed for us in the book of Ezekiel chapter 28. God is talking to the king of Tyrus here which is a type of Satan. Starting in verse 2a, ***...thine heart is lifted up, and thou hast said, I am a God...*** Ohooo, pretty important fellow! Yep! ***...I sit in the seat of God...*** Ohooo, he's got a pretty important job. Verse 3, Behold, thou art wiser than Daniel... Ohooo, he has wisdom! Verse 4, ***With thy wisdom and with thine understanding thou hast gotten thee riches...*** Ohooo, he's got money! You see; the four things that cause pride are power, wisdom, money, and beauty. Beauty is mentioned in verse 17.



What is it about power? Now this is me a few years ago before I got sick (figure 3-9). Have you ever noticed the body builders that have the budding muscles? They always walk around as if they picked up the hairspray instead of the underarm deodorant. They are very stiff, and cant get their arms back down. They have those big muscles; theyre so proud of them, and they have to make sure everybody sees them. I taught high school for fifteen years. Its hilarious! The big football player comes into the class, and he says, (he's wearing a skin-tight short-sleeve shirt and slowly flexes his biceps as he mimics raising his hand) Mr. Hovind, Ive got a question. You dont have a question, man! You just want everybody to see you flex your muscles, thats all. They always have their sleeves rolled up four or five notches; you can always tell which ones are proud. Now, there is nothing wrong with muscles at all, but there is something wrong with pride. You see; God hates pride, not muscles. God invented muscles. Its pride that God hates. When you get proud, thats when you have trouble. The Bible says that power causes pride.

We had a guy in our church at Longview, Texas named Derell Bowie. Derell Bowie was a black fellow and a good friend of mine. He was the Texas Power Lift Champion. He was one of those body builders. He was huge! You know, about like me. I said, Derell, how would you like to come to the Tyler Chapel where I preach every Sunday afternoon? We have about 300 black kids that attend. Why dont you come, share your testimony and do some weight lifting for the kids. We will make it a big bus promotion: *Derell Bowie, Texas Power Lift Champion, Coming!* He said, Brother Hovind, I would be happy to come. I said, That would be great Derell. That Sunday he showed up at the Chapel. Prior to that Sunday, he had asked me to bring all the weights we could find in the high school and bring them to the gym. Derell Bowie walked into the gym. His suit was kind of stretched all over him; all the places were about to rip. Those little kids' eyes were wide open. It became dead quiet in the gym. Derell walked over to me and asked, Brother Hovind, how much did you get? I said, Derell, we got all of the weights out of the high school -- 390 pounds! He said, Three ninety, is that all? I said, What are you talking about, Is that all? It took ten of us to carry it all into the gym. He said, Well, put all of them on the bar. I said, Put it all on the bar at once, all 390 pounds? He said, I wont even need to take my suit coat off for this. That guy lay down and benchpressed 390 pounds twenty times as if it were a toy. He put it back on the yoke, and jumped up. Those kids' eyes were twice as big now. Then he said, Okay kids, how many of you would like to see Brother Hovind do this? You know what they said. Well, I couldnt disappoint them. I laid down and did it thirty times just to show them. Actually, I did lie down, and I did try. I pushed on that bar, hard! Real hard! I dont think that the bar knew that I was pushing on it. I was pushing hard. I couldnt get it up off the yoke, and its a good thing that I didnt; it would have killed me. I would still be heard today gasping for breath. Three-hundred ninety pounds! I couldnt believe it.

There is something about power that makes people become proud. Now, if God gives you a lot of power, that is wonderful and great! Praise the Lord, but dont get proud about it. The same thing happens when a kid turns fifteen years old. A high-school boy finally gets that one hair to grow on his chest. Hes so proud of that hair. Hes going to make sure that everybody

sees it. He always leaves his shirt unbuttoned all the way down to his navel. He has a little hair spray on it with a little ribbon tied on it. He always wears the little sign on the side of his lapel that has an arrow that says, HAIR then, they walk around when its 40 below zero with their shirt unbuttoned down to their navel, and hes shivering and he says, Man, Im freezing! Someone comes up and says, Well, button your shirt. Mr. Macho says, Oh, I couldnt do that -- Why not? People wouldnt see -- People wouldnt see what? The hair! Awe, here, Ill get it for you. PLUCK! Ahhhh! His whole life was just ruined. We are proud of dumb stuff. Im telling you; its dumb stuff. My dog was born with hair on his chest.

I remember when I was going to Midwestern Bible College at Pontiac, Michigan, under Dr. Tom Malone, a bunch of guys decided to grow a mustache. It was kind of a fad; everybody was going to grow one. So, I let both hairs grow for a while. Dr. Malone stood in chapel one day and said, Ladies and gentlemen, we are going to have a new rule here at the school. I thought, Just what we need, another new rule. He said, No more mustaches on the men, or the women for that matter. Then he said something publicly that I could not believe. I would have never said that publicly. He said, I dont understand why you fellows would want to cultivate something under your nose that grows wild under your arm. I went back to the dormitory; got out my seldom-used razor; took one last longing look in the mirror; and shaved off both of them. Shkkkt, shkkkt! One of the guys across the hall got mad and quit school. Theyre not going to tell me that I cant have a mustache! He dropped out of college because of hair on his lip. Thats called PRIDE! Dont misunderstand me; there is nothing wrong with a mustache -- but there is something wrong with pride. Thats where the problem is. PRIDE! God hates pride. God doesnt hate mustaches. The Bible says power causes pride.

The Bible also says that wisdom causes pride. You know when people are really smart they usually become proud. Im -- smart! Oh, thats good. No, I mean that Im real -- smart! Oh, thats real -- good. No, I mean that Im real -- real -- smart! Oh! Well, thats real -- real -- good. There is always a kid in school when the teacher says, Who knows the answer? The kid says, I KNOW TEACHER, I KNOW! There is always that one kid that knows everything and he always has to jump up out of his seat, waving his hand, claiming to know the answer. I know, I know, call on me, I know this one! There is nothing wrong with knowing the answer, kids. You dont have to get proud and cocky about it. Just calm down and relax. Give someone else a chance. Pride! Intelligence and wisdom can cause pride.

The Bible also says that money can cause pride. You know money is really strange. Money can make people get proud. When people have lots of money, they often dont feel they need God; after all, they have George or Abraham. Thats sad. Money can cause pride. You can see the emotion that money brings when you play Monopoly. Have you ever played that game before? Have you ever played Monopoly and won? How do you feel when you win? I can tell you how you feel. Here you are. Youre playing Monopoly, and you are winning big time. You are slaughtering everybody. You own the whole board except for *Water Works*. You have hotels on everything. You even own *Community Chest* and *Go*. You own it all. It is now your turn to roll the dice. You have \$10,000 dollars in cash and nothing

to spend it on. You have hotels on everything, and you are about to roll the dice. Are you scared? The only one that you dont have is *Water Works*. Are you afraid that you might land on *Water Works*? No! Are you kidding? You can buy the board, man! You are about to win. You get that proud cocky I can go anywhere attitude. I have money! You toss the dice.

Have you ever played Monopoly and lost? Not very good are you? Lets get the picture. Here you are loosing big time. All you have left are *Water Works* and five bucks. You are about to lose. The other guy has the entire board; he has hotels on everything, and its your turn to roll the dice. You dont need to tell me what you are thinking, because I know what you are thinking. Ive been there many times. You are broke. You are a little nervous. Youre shaking the dice a little longer than normal because you are praying. Here is what you are praying, Lord, I want to roll a 5 because I want to go to *Jail* so bad. Lord, please let me role a 5; I want to go to *Jail*. You shake the dice, and you drop it. Its a 10, and you say, Awe no, of all the ones to roll. Thats not what I wanted. So, you count it out on the board. You have to make sure that 5+5 is still 10, so, you add it up, and its still 10. Then you check it on your calculator. Yep, still 10. So, you count it out, 1 - 2 - 3 - 4 - 5 - 6 - 7 - 8 - 9 -- *Boardwalk*. Awe brother! Lets count that again. So, you count again, 1 - 2 - 3 - 4 - 5 - 6 - sevvvn - eihhht - nnnn - *Boardwalk*. Awe no, of all the places to land. Then you ask the other fellow, Hhh, Hhh, how much is it? Hes calm; youre nervous, and he says, Oh, lets see! *Boardwalk*! That one has twelve hotels, ugh, thats going to be a few dollars. Lets see, *Boardwalk* with twelve hotels is -- four and one-half million dollars. Hes calm and youre nervous. You see, hes rich and you are broke. It is really that simple. When you are broke, you are humble. When you are rich, there is a strong tendency to be proud. It doesnt always happen, but it frequently happens. PRIDE!

The Bible also says beauty causes pride. What is it about the girls that are really pretty? Usually, not always, they become proud of their beauty. See how pretty I am! They are so proud of themselves. I was a high school teacher for fifteen years. I watched it year after year. Its almost always the pretty, talented, popular girls that are voted in as the cheerleaders. Almost immediately something seems to happen to many of them. When they realize that they are a cheerleader something changes. Now, they are just a notch above the rest of the girls. Their sweat doesn't stink anymore because they are cheerleaders. Then they get their own little clicks together. They meet at the lunch room, and one of them sits down to eat her lunch. Then, another one of the girls comes in who is not a cheerleader. Shes a few pounds overweight. She has a few warts and a few zits, and she doesnt have an alligator on her clothes. Shes just not quite with it. She sits down to eat her lunch, and the cheerleader says, Ugh, excuse me deary. This seat is saved -- for another cheerleader. Would you mind taking your lunch, and going away some place, even maybe out on the highway or something? You just want to go up and slap the devil out of them. Do you understand what I am saying? They have that proud cocky look on their face. PRIDE! Now, there is nothing wrong with being beautiful. There is nothing wrong with a little makeup. Every old barn needs a coat of paint once in a while. There is nothing wrong with that, but there is something wrong with pride. The Bible says in Proverbs 31:30a, ***Favor is deceitful, and beauty is vain...***

Boy, dont trust those things to get you through life. PRIDE! God hates pride. The Bible has a lot to say about pride. Its amazing how many verses there are on pride. In Proverbs 13:10a, the Bible says, ***Only by pride cometh contention...*** Only by pride cometh contention? The word contention means fight, argument. Did you know that every single fight is caused by pride? You husbands and wives that dont get along too good; I know whats causing your problem. I dont even know where you live -- but its pride. I guarantee it. Hey kids, if youre not getting along too good with your brothers and sisters, I know whats causing your problem -- Pride! Youre not getting along with your boss too good? I know what the problem is -- Pride!

Another example; you are getting ready to go someplace, so, all of your kids are running to the car, and one of them says, I want the front seat! Ohooo! Pride! I want the window! Ohooo! Pride! Mom, he keeps changing the channels. I want the controller for a while! Ohooo! Pride! It sounds as if Ive been in your house, doesnt it? No, I have three kids of my own; so I know how it goes. Pride causes every single fight that there is. Hey kids do you want to try something neat? Next time that you are all running out to the car to get in, and your brother or sister says, I want the front seat! Here is what you should do. It will work every time. Just try it. When brother or sister says, I want the front! You say, Okay, and get in the back seat, and dont say another word. Your mom will faint, and you will get to drive the car. Try it!

There is something about pride; it causes ever single fight. God says every fight is caused by pride, and it is. If you went fishing and pulled up an angry 30-ton, 24-foot tall, Tyrannosaurus Rex who came charging at your boat with a hook in his lip and drool coming off his teeth, there are only a few ways to stop him.. I have studied these creatures for years. There are a few things that make them afraid. Pay close attention because if one ever comes charging after you, this may help to save your life someday. Number one, you should say, Hold it, Mr. Tyrannosaurus, stop right there! You cant bother me because I have muscles. I can benchpress 150 pounds. Ohooo! Do you think that will scare him away? I dont. You should see how far he can throw 150 pounds. That wouldnt work; would it muscles? Try this one, Mr. Tyrannosaurus, hold it! Stop right there! You cant eat me sir because I have hair (pointing to chest.) Ohooo man! Thatll scare him. Watch him run now, YIKE, YIKE, YIKE , YIKE. Boy, hell run back into the woods. That wont work. Try this one, Mr. Tyrannosaurus, you cant eat me, sir. Im smart. I have a high IQ. I was valedictorian in my class. I was at the top. He doesnt care. It all tastes the same to him. Right? You might be real proud of those brains that you have, but Im telling you, they are not going to matter some day.

Do you know why God is doing this to Job? Why is he talking about Leviathan? God is teaching Job about the fear of God. You see, someday you are going to stand before God, and its not going to matter about those muscles. Its not going to matter about that hair. Its not going to matter about your brains. Its not going to matter about your good looks. You are going to stand before God. Just as Leviathan was a type of Satan in the book of Revelation, God is using the power and the fear of this creature to give

Job an idea that he ought to fear God that way. You see; you are going to stand before God.

Here is another way to stop a Leviathan. If a Tyrannosaurus came charging after you, and you said, Hold it, Mr. Tyrannosaurus! Stop right there! You cant eat me. I have money. Big bucks! You may be real proud of your money, thats wonderful and great, but Im telling you, its not going to matter some day. It is not going to matter when you stand before God. Its not going to matter at all. Its all level ground on judgment day.

Try this one, Mr. Tyrannosaurus, you cant eat me. Im a cheerleader! Go team go! Oho! Man, thatll scare him. It scares him bad every time. They run off into the woods every time. Just the thought of it, Oh, I couldnt possibly eat a cheerleader. Mr. T., you cant eat me. Im pretty! See, I just got my teeth fixed.

Now, I dont know in what area you are proud. Each of us has a problem with one of these areas. God hates pride. If a Tyrannosaurus came charging after you, you would forget all about those things of which you are proud.

Try this one, Mr. T., you cant eat me, sir! I am captain of the basketball team! I can actually take a rubber ball, and bounce it. Ohooo! Thatll scare him; want it? You can bounce a ball? Not only that, when I am done bouncing the ball, I can throw it through a hoop. Watch him run now.

Try this one, Mr. Tyrannosaurus, you cant eat me. Im the quarterback on the football team. I can take a piece of a pig, blow it full of air, and throw it. Then one of the other guys, with the same color pajamas on, grabs the pig and runs through the pluming, and we will get six points! Did you hear me? SIX POINTS! Im telling you, it is not going to matter one day. Neither is it going to matter when you stand before God.

Try this one, Mr. T., you cant eat me. I have a fancy car. I have a Caderack, I mean a Rinkon Continental. Yep, new! I have a pickup truck. Look, it doesnt matter. We all have things in our life that tend to cause pride. God says, Job, what about Leviathan? Hes big, isnt he? Hes got big teeth. Hes ferocious. You wouldnt mess with him, would you? Job, are you afraid of me?

Job learned a powerful lesson that day. By looking at a dinosaur, Job learned to fear the Lord. What would happen if a Tyrannosaurus Rex came charging after you right now? If you walked outside and a 24-foot tall Tyrannosaurus came charging out of the woods with a loud *RRRRRAARRR*, you would forget all about your muscles. You would forget all about your hair. You would forget all about your brains. You would forget all about your money. You would forget all about your fancy car, your fancy house. Do you know what you would do? You would wet your pants, SNAP, just like that. You would be scared to death. You would be terrified, and you know, Im afraid that we dont have the fear of God as we ought to in this country anymore. We need to fear God. Job needed to fear the Lord.

The Bible says in I Peter 5:5, ***...God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.*** Resisteth the proud and gives grace to the humble? Verse 6, ***Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time.*** You see; God hates pride. He wants us to humble ourselves. God will give you the job he wants you to have. I know kids going through Bible college. They cant wait to preach. They want to get a pulpit. They are going to be the pastor of the church. They

are going to get their own little parking place that says, PASTOR. Yep! Dont park there, thats the PASTORS spot. There is nothing wrong with all of that, but Im telling you; there is something wrong with pride. What you should do is humble yourself and let God exalt you when Hes ready.

Folks, we get proud of the wrong things at the wrong time. ***God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.*** In II Chronicles 7:14, God says, ***If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn*** (off their wicked TV programs) ***from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.*** Hey, do you want God to fix America? Would you really like to see revival? Here is the formula. Its very simple. Humble yourself, pray, seek His face, and turn from your wickedness. You see; God is not waiting for the sinners to become converted. The problem with America is not the prostitutes, the queers, or the drug addicts. Thats not the problem. Its not even the politicians, believe it or not. The problem with this country is the Christians are not living right. Its me, its me, its me O Lord, standing in the need of prayer, not my brother not my sister, its me O Lord, standing in the need of prayer.

Is your heart right with God right now? Do you have cinders in your elbow? Do you have some sin in your life? Are you right with God? You say, Brother Hovind, Im a deacon. I deac. Thats wonderful, thats great. Are you right with God? You say, Brother Hovind, I sing specials in the church. Thats wonderful, thats great. Are you right with God? You say, Brother Hovind, Im in a position of power in this church. Im the Elder. Im the Pastor. Im the Youth Director. Im the Song Leader. Thats wonderful, thats great. Is your heart right with God?

You see if your heart is not right with God, nothing else is going to matter one day. Nothing else is going to matter! Is your heart right with God?

I preached my dads funeral. One of the things that I liked about my dad was although he was a brilliant man he was very humble. I remember a couple of weeks after I was saved at the age of sixteen; I lied to my daddy one night. It was dumb; it was no big deal, but it bothered me. My heart wasnt clean anymore. I told a lie. The next day dad was driving me to school in the old Volkswagen, and I started crying. He said, Whats the matter son? I said, Dad, pull over, would you please? He pulled over beside McDonalds on highway 150, East Peoria, Illinois. I said, Dad, look, I lied to you last night. Id like for you to forgive me. He said in a very forgiving manner, Sure son. Then, he went on, and dropped me off at school that morning. You know; I went to school that morning with two things that I had not had before. I had a clean heart, and bloodshot eyes. Is your heart right with God? I dont need to know, but you had better know. You had better figure it out. You had better ask Him.

I remember, I had been saved just a short time, and the Lord said, Hey son, what are you going to do about the grocery store up there? You know, old Sid up there at the IGA. I said, Oh Lord, youre right. Well, I wrestled with it for a while, and finally I went to IGA, and I said, Hey Sid! He said, Youre one of the Hovinds, arent you? I said, Yes sir. Sid look, I need to give you \$10. He said, Yea, what are you going to get, Hovind? I said, Sid, I ugh... Sid, I want you to forgive me, Ive stolen things from your store. Ive

stolen bubble gum, candy, baseball cards, and ugh, I want to give you \$10. This should more than cover it. Sid didnt understand much about the forgiveness of the Lord, but he certainly understood \$10. He said, Awe, Okay, no problem.

You know, I walked out of that store with two things that I had never had before. A skinny wallet and a clean heart. Is your heart clean? Are you right with God?

I can remember when my daddy said to me, Son, its time for you to learn how to drive. I said, Okay dad! Stick shift? He said, Yep! Stick shift. I said, Okay dad, lets go. We went out to the K-Mart parking lot late one night after everything was closed. The parking lot was empty, and it was a good thing for other folks. He said, Okay son, start it up. Heres first gear; heres the gear pattern; put the clutch in; thats the brake; and thats the gas. He showed me all of that stuff. He said, Now, let the clutch out slow, and give it some gas. So, I let the clutch too fast, and the car died. He said, Its Okay son, relax, no problem. Start it up and try again. Now, let the clutch out slow. Well, for the next 10 or 15 minutes, I either peeled out or killed the motor as I attempted to slowly demolish his Volkswagen. Finally after about 10 or 15 minutes, my dad did something that he had never done before in my life. My dad yelled at me. He said, I SAID LET IT OUT SLOW! Then, immediately, he burst into tears. My dad, a six-foot two Marine in WW2, Electrical Engineer at Caterpillar Company; one of the smartest men that I have ever known in the world, was setting in the front seat crying because he yelled at me. Then he said, Son, Im sorry. Forgive me. Let me drive. Lets go home. Well try another night. He was humble.

Hey dads, when is the last time that you humbled yourself before your kids? When was the last time your kids heard you say, Hey, Im sorry! I was wrong. Hey moms, when was the last time you humbled yourself? When was the last time your kids heard you say, Honey, Im sorry! I was wrong. Forgive me. Hey kids, when was the last time that you humbled yourself? When was the last time that you said to your brother or sister, Im sorry! I was wrong. Please forgive me. Im not talking about one of those apologies where your mother drags you in by your ear, and says, You tell your brother and sister that you are sorry. Then you say, Okay! Im sorry, sorry, sorry! I mean the real thing where you humble yourself, and you say, God, Im sorry!

God is just waiting on people to humble themselves, pray, and seek his face. If we as Christians will do that, He will fix our country. Thats his promise there in II Chronicles 7:14. Do you want God to fix it? Theres the solution. How about it, is your heart right with God?

## **Chapter 4**

### *Evolution, the Foundation For Communism, Nazism and Socialism*

Before the 1800s, almost everybody believed that the world was only six or seven thousand years old. They held to the creationist or the Christian world view of history. It has always amazed me how two people can look at the same thing and come to opposite conclusions as to what they are seeing. For instance, two people can both be looking at the Grand Canyon and come up with opposite conclusions on how it got there. The evolutionist stands there and says, Wow! Look what the Colorado River has done for millions of years. The creationist says, Wow! Look what the flood did in about 30 minutes. Somebody is wrong!

Here is an example of how two people can conclude something different about the same thing. The item in figure 41 is a calf puller. A what? If you are a farmer, you may have seen one of these. Occasionally, a cow has a



difficult time having her first calf. One day, a farmer was pulling a calf out that was a breech birth, meaning the back feet were coming out first. The farmer was using the calf puller with a winch wrapped around the legs of the calf to jack the calf out of the cow. Well, a city slicker stopped to see what was going on because he had never seen anything like this before. He stood there staring over the fence, and the farmer said, Come here, man! Give me some help! The city slicker said, Who me? The farmer said, Yes! Hurry, come here! I need some help! He got out of his car, jumped over the fence, and ran over to help the farmer pull the calf. He never said a word during the ordeal. He just did what he was told. Well, about ten minutes later they were walking up to the barn to get washed up, and the farmer said, I want to thank you for helping me. I really appreciate it. The city slicker said, Thats fine, no problem, no problem. The farmer said, Youve been awfully quiet. Are you Okay? The city slicker says, Oh yeah, Im Okay. The farmer said, Have you ever seen anything like that before? The city slicker said, No sir, Ive never seen anything like that in my entire life. The farmer said, Well, do you have any questions? The city slicker said, Yes sir, I do. Its been bothering me the whole time that we were out there pulling that calf. The farmer said, Well, whats your question.? The city slicker said, How fast do you figure that calf was going when it ran into that cow? The farmer said, No, no, no, you are looking at it all wrong. We were not separating a wreck.

Sometimes people look at things and come to the wrong conclusion of how they got there. This is what causes them to scoff at the Bible. We were warned in II Peter 3:3-5a, ***Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. For this they willingly are ignorant of...*** Willingly ignorant? Now, I can understand being ignorant because I was born 100 percent ignorant. My mother can vouch for that, but to be willingly ignorant is a different story. Thats like wanting to be stupid. I believe the Bible is the infallible, inerrant word of the living God. The scoffers scoff at the Bible because they are ignorant of two important things. They are ignorant of the original creation, how God made the heavens, and the flood. Look at those verses. The Bible states in verses 5 and 6, ***For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.*** Thats the flood. Scoffers are ignorant of the flood. Actually, they are also ignorant of the judgment of God that is to come. This is described in verses 9 and 10. It states, ***The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.*** Here you have the creation, the flood, and the judgment. The judgment is what they are trying to avoid because the flood speaks of judgment. God has the right to judge this world.

One of the first scoffers in the past couple of hundred years was a guy named James Hutton. James Hutton was one of the first men to really propose that the earth was more than six or seven thousand years old. Up until his time, everyone believed that the world was only six or seven thousand years old just as the Bible says. Along came Hutton, an amateur geologist, and he said, You know, I think the world is millions of years old. A man name Charles Lyell read and was greatly influenced by Huttons book. Charles Lyell, a lawyer from Scotland, was also an amateur geologist. He did not like the Bible. He didnt like the absolute authority of Scripture. Somebody recently calculated that if all the lawyers in the world were laid end-to-end around the equator the world would be a better place. Charles Lyell didnt like the Bible, and in 1830 he wrote a book, *Principles of Geology*. In that book, he invented what is known today as the *geologic column*. The *geologic column* has different layers known as the Cenozoid, Mesozoid, Paleozoid, and the Archeozoid. Maybe you remember having to study about the *geologic column* in science class. There is also the Jurassic layer, the Triassic, Permian, Mississippian, the Devonian, among others. I taught earth science for many years, and you might want to know a few interesting facts about the *geologic column*.

First of all, the *geologic column* can only be found in one place in the world. The only place that you can actually find the *geologic column* is in the textbooks. It doesnt exist anywhere else. Now, its true that the earth has many layers, but the *geologic column* can only be found in textbooks and in the imagination of those people who believe in it. Another thing that you might want to know about the *geologic column* is that the *geologic column* is the Bible to the evolutionist. Everything must be interpreted in light of the *geologic column*. For example, the Jurassic layer contains dinosaur bones. Therefore, if you find a dinosaur bone, its automatically classified as Jurassic layer, and each of those layers has an index fossil, like dinosaurs for Jurassic, and trilobites for Cambrian. Each layer has an age assigned to it. They will say that one is 500 million years old, another is 200 million years old, and so on. It is true that the earth has many layers. Ive been to the Grand Canyon, Royal Gorge, Snake River Valley, and all of the major canyons out west. Ive studied the major fault lines. I lived right next to the San Andreas fault, the Hayward fault, and the New Madrid fault. Ive studied most of the major faults in America, and none of them are my fault, but Ive studied them. There is no question that there are layers in the earth.

How did they get there? Was each of those layers put down over millions and billions of years as we are taught in school, or could it be that all of those layers were deposited very rapidly in a one-year long flood with Noah and his family being saved in a boat? In early 1990, I took my family with me to Union Center, South Dakota where I had a preaching engagement. Union Center is a town of forty people. You cant get there from here because the town is too small. You have to start there and work your way back. It was not quite the end of the world, but we could see it from there. We were awfully close. The church had thirty-eight members. It was a very successful church. Out of a town of forty thats not bad. The preacher said, Hey brother Hovind, lets go down to Rapid City, South Dakota, and we can tour the museum there, the School of Mines. They have a lot of dinosaur

bones there. I said, Great! I like dinosaur bones. So, all of us loaded up in a van and went down to Rapid City. As we were walking around the museum, one of the guides said, Let me give you a tour. So, this guide was giving us a tour, and we stopped next to the geologic time scale. The guide said, Ladies and gentlemen, this layer of dirt is about 70 million years old. My twelve-year old daughter said, Mister, how do you know how old that layer is? He said, Well honey, we tell the age of the layers by what type of fossils we find in them. This layer contains dinosaur bones, so it must be about 70 million years old. She said, Okay, thank you sir. We walked around to the other side of the zeuglodon display, and the guide said, Now, ladies and gentlemen, these bones that you are looking at are about 100 million years old. My daughter raised her hand again. She said, Sir, how do you tell how old the bones are? He said, Well, the age of the bones is determined by which layer they are found in. She said, Sir, when we were standing on the other side, you told us that you know the age of the layer by the bones found in them, and now you are telling me that you know the age of the bones by the layer in which they are found. Isn't that *circular reasoning*? I thought, Ah, a chip off the old block. That guide had the strangest look on his face. It was almost as if he were thinking. He looked at my daughter, and then he looked over at me. I wasn't about to help him, and I thought, This is going to be good. I have to hear what he says to this one. He looked back at my daughter and he said, You know, you are right! I've never thought of that before. That is *circular reasoning*!

You know, they date the fossils by the layers, and then they turn right around and date the layers by the fossils. That's what they do in the textbooks. One typical textbook example states, *Fossils . . . sedimentary rocks are laid down in horizontal layers. The fossils in these layers increase in age from top to bottom.* (Glenco Biology, 1994.) Oh, if it's in the bottom, it must be early fossils, so they are dating the fossils by which layers they are found in, or their geologic position. Just four pages later in the same book it states, *Trilobite fossils make good index fossils. If a trilobite, such as this one, is found in a rock layer, the rock layer was probably formed 500 to 600 million years ago.* (Holt, Rinehart, Winston, 1989, page 290.) Now, wait a minute! Do you think that trilobites lived 500 million years ago? Here they are dating the layer by the fossils, and the fossils by the layer. This is *circular reasoning*. They could have picked any number that they wanted. No, trilobites did not live 500 million years ago.

Pictured in figure 4-3 is a fossil of a shoe print where a man stepped on two trilobites. The guy had a shoe on, a heel and everything. Many geologists refuse to look at the fossil. They say, It can't be true! We don't want to see it! Those that look at it say that there are two possible ways to explain it. Well, let us hear it. If trilobites lived 500 million years ago, and man only got here 3 million years ago, how could there be a shoe print on top of two trilobites? They said, It could be that aliens visited the planet 500 million years ago. Oh yeah, aliens! That'll do it every time. Then they say, Or, it might be that maybe there was a larger trilobite shaped like a shoe that fell on two smaller ones. There were some big trilobites, but they were not shaped like a shoe. I believe the best explanation of a fossilized shoe print on top of two trilobites is found in II Peter chapter 3: The scoffers are willingly ignorant! You would have to have help to be that dumb. There is

no way that you could do that on your own. You would have to go to college for years to be so misinformed to think, Oh yeah, its billions of years old. That simply is not true! Neither are those layers different ages.

All over the world they find strange fossils called polystrata fossils, like the petrified tree shown in figure 4-4. This petrified tree is standing straight up running through many layers of strata. Now, hold on just a minute! If that bottom layer is 600 million years old and the top layer is only 5 million years old, there are only two choices: either that tree stood there 500 million years and didnt rot, or that tree grew through seventy-five feet of solid rock looking for sunlight. Which do you prefer? I dont believe that those layers were formed independently; I think that that they were all formed during a one-year flood. You can get a jar of dirt , put water in it, and shake it up. It will automatically settle out into layers for you. Its called *hydrologic sorting*. All of the layers were formed during Noahs flood. The flood lasted for a year. Polystrata fossil trees standing straight up are a common feature. They are found all over the world. Figure 4-5 shows a group of tree trunks located in France that are straight up running through multiple layers of rock strata. They simply are not millions of years old.

Charles Darwin located a copy of Charles Lyells book. Dont get these two confused. Charles Lyell invented the *geologic column*. Charles Darwin graduated from Bible college to be a preacher. A short time after that, he set sail on the H.M.S. Beagle to travel around the world and collect bugs and birds for five years as an unpaid naturalist. He didnt make any money at it; they just fed him for five years. As he walked on board the Beagle, he had two books with him among many other things. He had his Bible, of course because he had just got out of Bible college. He also had the book that Charles Lyell had just written about the *geologic column*, *Principles of Geology*. As Darwin read the book about the principles of geology, his faith in Scripture was destroyed. Darwin came back a doubter, a septic, a scoffer. Later on, he claimed to be an atheist; then, after he died, his wife started a rumor that he repented on his death bed. That rumor still circulates today. People pass out tracts today that claim Charles Darwin repented on his death bed.

Darwin was greatly influenced by Charles Lyell. Lyell kept pushing Darwin to publish a book. Finally about thirty years later, Darwin published his book, which is discussed later. As Darwin sailed around, he arrived at the Galapagos Islands off the coast of Ecuador in South America. When he got to the Galapagos, he made notes of many different varieties of finches on the island, based upon their beak shape. Some had a heavy beak, and some had a skinny beak. Darwin counted eighteen different kinds or varieties of finches. Charles Darwin said, You know, Ill bet all of these finches have a common ancestor. Well, thats brilliant Charlie! I bet they do too, and I bet the ancestor was a finch of some kind. Charlie then said, You know, if these finches all have a common ancestor, then maybe these finches have the same common ancestor as does the pine tree. Wait, wait, wait! Ill agree with all the finches having a common ancestor, but the finches having the same ancestor as the pine tree? No, I dont think that I will buy that.

That is the difference between what we call *simple variation*, and what other people call *macro evolution*. Some refer to the term *simple variation* as *micro evolution*; I prefer the term *simple variation*. Its true that all of the

finches probably had a common ancestor, and it was a finch. The Bible does not say that they shall bring forth after their species. The Bible says that they shall bring forth after their kind. If you stand ten feet back from it and look at it, it is still the same kind of animal. Therefore, the creationists say that the variations have taken place since the flood.

I was visiting the University of Boston a few years ago. They had six professors who wanted me to teach on creationism. They were going to show these students that, There is nothing to this creationism stuff. Evolution is the only way to interpret life on planet earth. They asked me if I would come under those conditions, and I readily agreed. As I was talking to this group about creationism, I said, Six-thousand years ago God created everything, and 4,400 years ago there was a flood. Two of each kind and seven of some were saved on board an ark. After the flood, they diversified. They had babies, grandbabies, great-grandbabies and so on which became a little bit different; however, they stayed within the same kind of animal. One of the professors in the audience was kind of a smart-aleck and was going to show off in front of his class. He said, Mr. Hovind, do you mean to tell me that all 250 different kind of dogs in the world, came from just two dogs off Noahs ark? I said, Sir, would you look at what you are teaching your class! You are teaching your students that all the different kinds of dogs in the world came from a rock! Yeah, I would rather believe that they came from two dogs off Noahs ark. Dont tell me that they came from a rock. I wont buy that at all. There have been variations. There have been many different kinds of finches.

There are many different kinds of corn. I come from Illinois corn country. There are so many different kinds of corn that they have to number them. Maybe you have seen the numbers as you drive down the highway, XL4-109; you know, dont mix that one with XL4-102 because something might explode. No, no. You can crossbreed your corn for the next four-billion years, and all that you will get is a corn of some kind. You are never going to get a hamster, or a tomato, or a whale to grow on that corn stalk. Its just not going to happen.

There are many varieties of cows. It might be that the buffalo, the water buffalo, and the bison all have a common ancestor. I would not argue that, but they are still the cow kind. Its obvious that they are not turtles. There are even variations and mutations. You could scramble up the chromosomes and get something strange once in a while. For example, take the word Christmas. By rearranging the letters you can develop thousands of words. From the word Christmas you can get the word *has*, *mat*, *Sam*, *Christ*, and *mist*. There are numerous words that you can form, but you are never going to get, *Xerox*, or *queen*. The letters are not there. Rearranging the known information in the chromosomes is not going to produce anything new. Scrambling up English letters of the alphabet will produce all kinds of words, but you are never going to get Chinese words. You are not going to get anything new, and that is what evolutionists dont understand. Mutations only rearrange the material that is already there. Yes, mutations happen. Pictured in figure 4-6 is a cow with a leg growing out of its back. Something went wrong. Its a five-legged cow. It cannot run any faster. Its a mutation; its harmful. Mutations are harmful, fatal, or neutral, or they are blended back into the population. Figure 4-7 shows a short-legged sheep. The

textbook states: *This mutation would not last in nature.* Well, of course not! Hes the first one the wolf is going to catch. GO BOYS GO! HERE COMES THE WOLF! Oops, Herman didnt make it! Mutations are harmful or fatal. Figure 4-8 shows a picture of a two-headed turtle. That is a mutation. Something went wrong. A two-headed turtle? Hes not going to live long. Hes going to freeze the first winter! Nobody makes a double-necked, turtle-neck sweater. Mutations are harmful or fatal. However, in the textbooks they state: Boys and girls, weve got all these evidences of evolution.

I taught biology, earth science, and physical science for fifteen years in high school, and these are some of the things that they give as evidences of evolution. The title page shown in figure 4-9 is the contents of the biology book, *DC East, 1971*. It states, *Evidence from Fossils. Evidence from Structure.* Oh, the way that they are designed. Their structures are similar. *Evidence from Molecular Biology.* Oh, that will impress the students. *Evidence from Development* (as the babies develop inside the mother). These are the evidences they give, and our children are going to face this logic. You need to always be ready to give an answer to every man that asketh the reason of the hope that is in you. You ought to be able to answer each of these things as they come up in your class. For instance, when I was in biology class in high school, we did the fruit fly experiment. We raised the fruit fly. Bigger laboratories raised zillions of these flies, and they did all sorts of things to these flies to cause them to have mutated babies. They nuked them, x-rayed them, microwaved them. You name it; they did it to those flies and produced all kinds of mutated babies. They got flies with curled wings. Those are the flies that fly in circles! They produced flies with red eyes, white eyes, brown eyes, and hairy antennas. They produced all kinds of mutated flies. They even produced flies without any wings. What do you call that, a crawl? He cant fly! After raising eighty-thousand generations of flies, somebody wrote a report and said, Ladies and gentlemen, weve raised eighty-thousand generations of flies. We have seen millions of mutations, but we have never seen a beneficial mutation. One of the flies was just as good as great great great great grandpa fly. He continued to say in the report, Therefore, we must conclude that flies have evolved as far as they can go. Ah, excuse me sir! There might be another way to look at that, you know! How fast was that calf going anyway? It might be that the reason you cannot improve upon them is that God made them right in the beginning. Maybe that is why all of your mutations are harmful or fatal, but they dont want to reach that conclusion at all.

They also teach in school that the *peppered moth* is proof of evolution. The *peppered moth*? Maybe you will remember being taught that the moth changed colors from white to black, and then from black to white. This is listed in the textbooks as the best example of evolution. Somebody went around and counted the moths on the trees in England. They had nothing better to do. They found out that there was this one species of moths called the *peppered moth* and that approximately 95 percent of them were white, and about 5 percent of them were black. Because the trees were white with a lot of moss and lichen, the white moths blended in very well. Then when England began to burn a lot of coal during the industrial revolution, the trees turned black due to the soot. As the guy went around counting the moths again, he discovered that 95 percent of the moths are now black

because the trees were black. The evolutionist said, Ah, dont you see? This proves evolution. The white moth evolved into a black moth. No, no, no! Do you know what happened? When the tree turned black, the white moth became more visible, and was eaten by birds. The black moth had more babies. The white moth lost its camouflage. When they quit burning coal, the trees turned white again and guess what? Today, the population has shifted back to 95 percent white moths and 5 percent black moths. Thats not evolution. They started off as a *peppered moth* and they ended up as a *peppered moth*. Nothing changed at all except the ratio of the population. If thats the best example of evolution, they dont have any example at all. Actually, I think because there are two varieties of the same species, dark and light, that this provides good evidence of an intelligent creator.

Do you know that General Motors puts a heater and an air conditioner in some of their cars? Is that dumb? No, thats advanced planning. Some of the cars go to cold climates, and some go to hot climates. The creator gave the peppered moth the ability to produce a variety of offspring so that some will survive in any given environment. Thats pretty good thinking! No, the *peppered moth* is not an example of evolution. Some schools have activities for the children, such as: Boys and girls, get a large sheet of black paper and put it on the floor. Cut 200 white circles and 200 black circles, and then throw them on the floor. The object is to see who can pick up the most circles in one minute. Well, because of the black paper, they would pick up mostly white circles. They say, See, this proves evolution. Excuse me! That proves evolution? Thats the *peppered moth* experiment. What you are doing is making more work for the janitor to pick up the ones that you dont pick up, and you are wasting classroom time. They ought to be learning real science while they are there and forget all of this stupidity about evolution. It has nothing to do with science. Its a waist of time and a waist of textbook space.

Evolutionists will say: Boys and girls, dinosaurs slowly turned into birds. Dinosaurs turned into birds? Oh yes! No problem. You get your dinosaur, take off a few pounds, grow a few feathers, and take off and fly, man! You can do it. Flap faster! No, no, no! Hold on a second! There are a few differences between a dinosaur and a bird. By the way, in the movie Jurassic Park, the whole plot was dinosaurs turning into birds. At the end, the guy is in the helicopter going home when he sees the pelican, and hes thinking, Ah, dinosaurs turned into pelicans. Yeah, right! There are a few differences between a reptile and a bird. Reptiles are covered with scales, and birds are covered with feathers. Evolutionists may say, Yeah, but they are both made out of carotene. So! They come from different genes on the chromosome, and the reptile scale is very different from a feather. Take a look at one sometime. They say: If you read a book on archaeopteryx, it will provide proof of dinosaurs turning into birds. We have the fossil of an archaeopteryx. Well, hold on a minute! Reptiles have a three-chambered heart, and birds have a four-chambered heart. Their reproductive system, body coverings and lungs are very different. Reptiles have a sack-type lung, and they breathe in and out. Birds have a tubular-type lung, and they breathe through their lungs, not in and out of their lungs. How are the critters going to survive that transition?

Evolutionists would say, Some of the dinosaurs had hollow bones. Okay, maybe so, for structural reasons, but not so they could fly. The bones were lighter and stronger. They say: We have proof. We have an archaeopteryx. You have what? They say: Archaeopteryx! Its called ancient wing. Oh yeah! Did you know that archaeopteryxes are very famous fossils? Only six of them have been found (figure 4-12). All of them come from the same place in Germany. There is also a very strong indication that all six of them are deliberate frauds. It is possible that they are super-imposed fossils. Lets just assume that archaeopteryx is legitimate. What is a archaeopteryx? Its a bird about twelve inches long or about the size of a pigeon. Evolutionists say: We can prove that dinosaurs turned to birds because of the archaeopteryx. Well, whats the proof? Dont you see, he has claws on his wings right there by his elbows. It is true that most birds do not have claws, but some do. An ostrich has claws; the hoatzin has claws; and the South American archaeopteryx has claws. Going from having claws to not having claws is an example of loosing something and not gaining something. Is that how evolution works. You lose a whole bunch of stuff and then finally you have it all? I dont get it teacher. They say: An Archaeopteryx has teeth in his beak. Well, that is true. It is rare but some birds do have teeth. Some reptiles have teeth and some dont. Some mammals have teeth and some dont. Some of you have teeth and some dont. That doesnt prove a thing. Going from having teeth to not having teeth is an example of losing something not gaining something. I remember when I went to school, they taught me that at one time man had a tail, but we lost it because it wasnt needed. I thought, Didnt need it! Have you ever stepped up to the door with two sacks of groceries and wished that you had some way to open that door? Now, if you had a tail you could reach around and grab that door knob, open the door and walk right into the house. Have you ever been driving down the road and wished you had something to turn the radio down because you were holding a can of Coke? If we had tails, it would be a little harder to get on our britches. A zipper or something would have to be added but somebody would figure that out. Lost it because we didnt need it! Come on, they had better get with the program! No, man never had a tail. This business of the missing link is just plain crazy.

Feathers are very complex. They did not evolve from scales. They come from different genes on the chromosomes. They are very different in the way that they are anchored into the skin. Actually, missing links have never been found. Zero, none! No missing links have been found because the whole chain is missing. God made them to bring forth after their kind, and they have been doing it every since. I understand that there are varieties, but they are still the same kind. Thats exactly what God said. Because they cannot find a missing link, many evolutionists have gone to a new theory. The new theory is called *punctuated equilibrium*. Oh, what does that mean? Stephen Gould of Harvard University, along with Niles Eldridge at the American Museum of Natural History in New York City, is a big promoter of *punctuated equilibrium*. I went to hear Niles speak at the University of West Florida on this subject. What is *punctuated equilibrium*? The evolutionists are saying: Maybe a reptile laid an egg and a bird hatched out, and that is why we cannot find any transitional fossils. Evolution happened in jumps. First the amphibian jumped to reptiles, then reptiles jumped to mammal.



Awe, what you are saying is because proof for evolution cannot be found, that proves it. Try that one in a court of law. Judge, we cant find any evidence against this guy, so that proves he is guilty. Where is the logic in that? No, *punctuated equilibrium* is an admission that there is no evidence. Thats crazy! Come on! Get with the program! That is not evidence at all.

The textbooks state that one of the evidences is *homology structures*. *Homology structures*, what does that mean? That means that different types of animals have the same body pattern to perform different things. For instance, the human has two bones in their wrist, the radius and the ulna. I have two of those myself which I have broken several times. Well, dont you know that the dolphin has two bones in his flipper? Guess what boys and girls? They are called the radius and the ulna. Oh, who named them, the dolphin? The bat has two bones in his leg, and they are called the radius and the ulna. Now, because they have all these similarities, this proves that they have a common ancestor? No, no, teacher! That might prove that they have a common designer. The same God designed them all, and its a pretty good pattern to have two bones in the wrist. Now, there might be two ways to look at that. How fast was that calf going anyway? I think that our public schools are teaching our children just one way to look at this, and they are not giving them another option. I believe God designed the animals. Did you know that the lugnuts from a Chevy will screw on to a Pontiac? That proves that they both evolved from a Honda 40 million years ago. No, they have this all confused.

The textbooks also state that one of the evidences for evolution is *embryology*. *Embryology*, what does that mean teacher? Well, boys and girls, we can watch different animals as they evolve, as they grow inside the mother. You will notice some similarities. For instance; they show in the textbooks that the human baby has gill slits. Do you remember being taught that when you went to school? A human baby has gill slits? Come on! That was proven to be wrong back in 1908, but it is still in the textbooks today. I collect public school textbooks. I have lots of them. The human baby does not have gill slits. That, simply, is bad science. The reason that they keep that stupid idea about the human baby having gill slits is thats the only way that they can say that the baby is not human yet. Its still in the fish stage or amphibian stage. No, those are not gill slits. Those are folds of skin. Each one develops into a different part of the muscles in the neck. They have nothing to do with breathing. Those are not gill slits. Ive seen fat folks that have five or six chins, and they cant breathe through any of them, except the top one. No, the baby does not breathe through them. They never function in any capacity similar to gill slits.

What they are trying to justify is abortion, and abortion is murder, plain and simple. I know because I reside in Pensacola, Florida where we have had several abortion clinics burned down, and two doctors shot. I didnt burn any of the buildings or shoot any of the doctors. By the way, I dont think Jesus would have done it that way either. Jesus grew up under Roman rule, and he didnt go around blowing up Roman tanks and burning down bridges. He was fighting a different war on a spiritual level. I think that is the way that it should be handled. However, abortion is murder, plain and simple. They justify this murder because they say that the human baby has gill slits, and it is not human yet. No, it is human the instant it is conceived,

and exterminating the life after conception is murder. The logic that they use is incredible.

I was flying back to Pensacola from Fort Lauderdale the day they had the big memorial rally for Dr. Gunn, one of the doctors that was shot. I happened to sit in the first seat of coach class because I like the first seat where there is more leg room to accommodate my long legs. I am so tall that when I stand up my feet go all the way to the floor, so they give me the first seat when it is available. Seated in front of me, in the first-class section, were two ladies -- Im sorry, two women from NOW, National Organization for Women. As we were getting off the plane, I noticed that written on their shirts were the words: CHOICE ABOVE ALL! So, being my mild-mannered self, I said, Excuse me ladies, ugh, sorry, women. What does *CHOICE ABOVE ALL* mean? One of the women said, We believe that a woman ought to have a right to choose. I said, Choose what? She said, Choose whether she wants to have an abortion or not. I said, Ah, maam, I have three children; I even delivered one of them at home. I taught biology and anatomy and at one time, I even raised hamsters. Im a little familiar with this process. Tell me, why does a womans right to choose stop at birth? Why dont we give the mothers the right to choose to kill their babies after they are born? It would be a whole lot safer. Why dont we extend the abortion right up until the time the child is two years old? I know a lot of mothers with three year olds that have thought about it a time or two. I went on to say, Hey, I have an idea! Lets extend abortion rights up to the time the child is eighteen years old. Ill bet they would behave a lot better. Look kid, one more time, and Im going to abort you! Where is the logic?

Later, I was standing on the curb waiting on a taxi cab, and I began talking to one of the newspaper reporters. He had brought his camera to film the big rally for the doctor. We began to talk about this doctor that was murdered in Pensacola, and I said, I think there are two things wrong with what happened. He said, Really, what do you think is wrong? I said, There should have been a trial first. Nobody should be shot without a fair trial. Secondly, the state of Florida should have shot him, not Griffeth. The state should be the one to execute evildoers not individual citizens. Dont go around shooting abortion doctors. Pray that we can change the system, and then work to change the system. Dr. Gunn was a murderer, plain and simple, and so was Griffeth!

The reasons they give for abortion are classic. Just look at the logic behind this.. They say, Its not human yet. That is based on bad science. Eighty-seven years ago that was proven wrong. That is not a good argument. Try again! They will say, It is not viable; it cant live on its own. Well, neither are you, stark naked on the North Pole! I wish someone would explain to me what viable means. Is the baby viable after its born? Lay it on the sidewalk for a few months and lets see how it does. Thats a stupid argument! Here is another one, It might be unwanted. There are a lot of children already born that are unwanted. There have been a few times when I didnt want mine, but does that give a parent the right to kill them? Try this one, It might be a financial burden. Show me a child that is not a financial burden. They are all financial burdens. Heres one, It might have been conceived through rape or incest. Well then, kill the rapist, not the baby! How have we become so crazy in this country? Here is one, Abortion

is legal. That's the one I hear all of the time. So, if it's legal that makes it right? Did you know that in 1939 the German Supreme Court passed a ruling that said, Jews are non-human? They believed that the Jews were non-human. Did you know that what Hitler's guards did was perfectly legal? It was legal to execute the Jews because they weren't human. Now, let me ask you a question. Did that logic hold up at the Nuremberg trials? No! Guess what, you abortionists? Your logic is not going to hold up at God's trial either. You are going to be in big trouble one of these days. Now, God is willing to forgive you. He loves you. He would like for you to become saved and go to heaven.

The woman that started *Planned Parenthood*, Margaret Sanger, (figure 4-15), is a strong believer in abortion. Most folks don't realize that she was also a racist. She wanted to wipe out the Spanish, the Blacks, and the Jews. She hated them. That was the total purpose for *Planned Parenthood*, and any taxpayer dollars going to *Planned Parenthood* ought to be against the law. If they want to make it on their own, that is their business, but I don't want to help pay for it.

One of the evidences that they will state in the textbooks as proof of evolution (besides *embryology*, and *homology structures*, and all of those things that we just covered) is: Boys and girls, we come from *simple life forms*. Hold it! Simple life forms? There is no such thing as a simple life form. One paramecium is more complex than the space shuttle, and you can fit thousands of those into a drop of water. No, the simplest life forms are extremely complex. Years ago adding machines were as large as a piano. These were the early adding machines. Today, they make microchips that will fit inside the eye of a needle (figure 4-16). I'm sorry! Smaller does not mean simpler. That is not a good argument. The DNA found in your body is also extremely complex. Because it is smaller does not mean it is simpler. Every person has about 50 trillion cells. Each cell contains 46 chromosomes. Each chromosome is about six feet long. If you extracted all of the DNA out of one person it would fill two tablespoons. Yet, if you unwound them, and tied them end to end, it would stretch from here to the moon and back 5,000 times. From here to the moon and back 5,000 times, and it fits into two tablespoons? In addition, if you typed out the genetic code found in the DNA in one person, it would fill up enough books to fill the Grand Canyon forty times. Maybe you work with computers in your line of work. Imagine this, take those forty Grand Canyons full of books, and condense them into software, and when you are done the software must fit into two tablespoons. Ah, God did it, and it reproduces itself! Do you know what the odds are of that happening by random chance? The odds are  $1 \times 10^{119,000}$ . That is a big number, since there are only 1041 electrons in the known universe. If you are one of those people that believes that evolution happened by blind chance, I would like for you to travel to Las Vegas. I could make some money off you. You would sit there and bet, Man, if I keep flipping this quarter long enough, it will come down as a penny. You will get a bunch of heads and tails, but you will never get a penny. Neither will you get DNA to arrive by random chance. It just did not happen.

Another argument that the evolutionists give that I just love is: Boys and girls, we can prove evolution because we can arrange these animals in order and prove their common ancestors. Wait, wait, wait! Just because they can

be arranged in some predetermined order does not prove that is the way that it happened. If I die, and I am buried on top of a hamster, does that prove that's my grandpa? No. They rearrange them in order and say that it proves something. It doesn't prove anything. Take, for instance, the horse theory. They have taken critters from all over the world, South America, Europe, and Asia, and put them all together in a predetermined idea. They have already decided to start off with the smallest to the largest animals. That is not the way they are found. They find them in all kinds of different layers, but they have it in the textbooks that the *eohippus* slowly changes to the *equus*, the modern horse. That's bologna! Modern horses have been found in layers lower than *eohippus*. The *eohippus* is nothing more than the *hyrax* running around South America today. They are still alive. No, the horse did not evolve. God created the horses. That's the way he made them. Arranging them in order does not prove anything other than the fact they can pick an arranged order.

If arranging things in order proves something; then, I need to show you the research that I have been doing. You see; I am a research scientist. Most people don't realize that right here in Pensacola, Florida we have a research scientist. I have been doing extensive research on the evolution of silverware (figure 4-17). I believe that knives gradually evolved into spoons and then into forks. It took around four and one-half million years for this process to be complete. As the great geological pressures were exerted on the knife, it was slowly squeezed into a spoon. Erosion then cut grooves in the end and turned it into a fork. Now, I was very concerned about my research because I felt as if there was a missing link. I knew that there was at least one missing link, particularly between the spoon and the fork. You see, spoons are rounded and they have no grooves. Forks are square and they have grooves, that's two jumps in one. Even *punctuated equilibrium* couldn't do that, so, I thought, There must be a missing link. I was very worried about it, thinking, Where can I find the missing link? Man, I have to find this missing link! I was doing research all over the country. As I was going to Connecticut to speak one time, I was flying aboard US Air at about 30,000 feet, and I was thinking, Man, where is the missing link? I have to find it! About that time, the stewardess came by, and handed it to me. I couldn't believe it! Talking about a stroke of luck! She had the missing link! That's why I couldn't find it. I stuck it in my pocket and said, Wow, I got it! When I got off the plane, the preacher met me. He asked, Are you hungry? I said, Yeah, I'm hungry. He said, Where would you like to eat? I said, Brother, I'll eat anything that doesn't move, and some things that move if they don't move quick enough. I then said, How about right there at Kentucky Fried Chicken? Guess what? We went into Kentucky Fried Chicken, and I found another missing link. I have now found three of the missing links, the sporks (figure 4-18). So, the evolutionist silverware is becoming very complete now. I even found a few mutations along the way (figure 4-19). No, arranging them in order is not proof of anything at all.

I was in Cape Girardeau, Missouri, Rush Limbaugh's home town, at the South East Missouri University for a debate. These professors said, Hey, we'll have a debate with Dr. Hovind provided there can be two of us against him. I said, Oh, okay. I do a lot of debates. I win every time I believe, and it's not because I'm smarter but it is because I'm right and they are wrong. Its

real easy to win a debate. These university professors' entire argument was this: Boys and girls, we can prove evolution because of *amino acid sequencing* inside cytochrome C." They spent the entire hour boring the audience to death about *amino acid sequencing*. What they do is check the proteins in different kinds of animals, and then count the way the amino acids are arranged. It is like checking the letters in a word. For example, they would have an H first then an A second and an N third and a D last. Then they look at the proteins from the next animal to the calculate percentage of difference. Then they arrange them in charts. Did you know that you can look at the chart and the only difference between a man and a duck is 11 percent in the *amino acid sequencing*. We only missed being a duck by 11 percent. Thats close man! We only missed being a rattlesnake by 14 percent. I know some people a lot closer than that. Now, hold on just a minute! If arranging amino acids in a sequence is supposed to prove something then let me show you the research that I have been doing. Im a research scientist you know. Ive been doing extensive research on arranging different items in nature based upon their water content. I discovered that clouds are 100 percent water, and watermelons are 97 percent water. Thats only a 3 percent difference. Thats pretty close. I even found a few missing links. I found out that jellyfish are 98 percent water, and so are snowcones. Well, Im not sure if watermelons turned into snowcones or jellyfish. One or the other had to evolve because they are awfully close, with only 1 percent difference. Then they turned into clouds; I think. Im not sure. I need a government grant, about 40 million dollars to continue research on this vital subject. I would probably get it if I applied for it, wouldnt I? The fact that there are similarities only proves there is a common designer. Thats all that it proves. It doesnt prove a common ancestry. Come on!

Let me show you more research that I have been doing. I just love research on evolution. Ive been doing it for years free of charge to the government. Ive been studying the number of chromosomes in different living organisms and arranging them in this chart (figure 4-21). Did you know Penicillin only has two chromosomes? Chromosomes are very complex. As the animals became more complex they add additional chromosomes. That would be logical. So, I believe that penicillin slowly turned into a fruit fly because it has eight chromosomes. Then over millions of years the fruit fly turned into a tomato because the tomato has twelve chromosomes. As they grew and became more complex and evolved over millions of years, they turned into, I cant tell which they are, carrots or lettuce, because they both have eight chromosomes. So, they must be identical twins. As they gradually evolved further and further, they turned into either kidney beans, redwood trees, or opossum. They all have the same number of chromosomes. I tell you what! If you get those three on a table together, its tough for a scientist to tell which is which. Let me see, which is the redwood tree and which is the opossum? All three of them have the same number of chromosomes. Then, over millions of more years they slowly evolved into either an alligator or an onion. I cant tell which because they both have the same number of chromosomes, and alligators and onions are awfully difficult to distinguish. Millions of years later, they kept evolving and finally turned into a human with forty-six chromosomes. If we keep

working on it, someday we might get those extra two chromosomes that we need and become a tobacco plant. I know some that already smell like it. They're getting close. If we keep working on it and keep evolving, we might evolve into a Carp. Carp have one-hundred chromosomes. You didn't know that a Carp is twice as complex as you, did you? The ultimate goal of all evolutionists someday, if we live long enough, is to evolve into the ultimate, four-hundred and eighty chromosomes, a fern. How many of you have as your life's dream to become a fern someday? We might make it someday. Why don't they teach that to the youths in school? Those are the facts. Boy, they avoid that like the plague!

It doesn't support their religion. Evolution is a religion. It is not a science. They are going to say, Boys and girls, we have all of these similarities between these different animals. For instance, monkeys and humans are very similar. Yes, but there are also a lot of differences. The brain structure is totally different. The jaw structure is different. The neck is very different. The hand structure is different. The foot is very different. The fact that there are similarities does not prove that they evolved from the same ancestor. Again, it might prove that they have the same designer.

As you look at all the different cars that have been made, you will note many similarities. Most of them have a wall-to-wall floor board. That doesn't prove anything, other than it is a design that works, that's all. The argument for common ancestry amazes me. Charles Darwin said the thing that confused him the most was the human eyeball. Did you know the human eye is extremely complex? Darwin even said in his book, *To suppose that the eye...could have been formed by natural selection, seems, I freely confess, absurd in the highest degree.* Well, Charlie, I believe that you are right. I don't believe that the eye could have possibly evolved by chance. What good is a 5 percent eyeball? If it doesn't work, it doesn't work. So many things that are very complex have to be completely there or they are useless. How many things have to be right on a car for it to run? Thousands of things, right? How many things have to be wrong on the car to make it not run? Any one of thousands, like not having your keys, or not having any gas, or not having any oil or letting your wife drive it first. A lot of things will cause your car not to run. Three-thousand bolts holds a car together and one nut can scatter it all over the road in a hurry. Look, the idea is crazy. Parts of a car are useless. The car is not useful until it is all together and it all works. If I gave you one tire, a running board, a frame, a steering wheel, and a windshield wiper, and said, Okay, take off. Head for Dallas. You're not going to make it. It's just too complex. I'm sorry you had better start over.

They could say, We understand the complexity of the human body. Therefore, that proves it happened by chance. Would you look at that logic! Understanding the complexity of a machine does not mean it could happen by chance. I've worked on cars a lot, and the more I fix cars the more I think, Wow! The guy who designed this is pretty smart. Fix anything. Take a computer apart. The guy that figured that out is pretty smart. The complexity says that there must have been a designer, but people choose to disobey God, and go away from Him anyway.

In spite of the obstacles, Charles Darwin wrote a book after much pushing and coaching from Charles Lyell. Children when you go to school, they will only tell you about the first four words in the book. They call it, *The Origin*

*of Species*. When they do that, raise your hand immediately and say, Excuse me teacher, what is the rest of the title, please? I would like to hear the whole title of the book. Back in those days, they had long titles on their books. Here is the whole title of the book, *The Origin Of Species By Means Of Natural Selection Or The Preservation Of Favored Races In The Struggle For Life*. Favored races? Ugh, Oh! Charlie, thats not politically correct. You see, Charles Darwins book came out in 1859. We still had slavery in this country. The Civil War didnt start until 1861. Racism was the driving factor that made the theory of evolution so popular in the 1800s. It was a great pseudo scientific way to justify racism. The European countries loved it because they were going to be colonizing the third-world countries. They were taking over these African countries and making them work all day for a penny a day. Then they were getting their diamonds, gold, silver, and rubies. It was racism! Charles Darwin was a racist to the extreme.

Darwin thought that natives were just advanced animals that hadnt evolved as far as the white European. His philosophy of life was destroyed by the stupid theory of evolution. The Bible warned us in Colossians 2:8, ***Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.*** A philosophy of life that says, There is no God. We got here by blind chance. There is no one that you must account to when you die. This theory will destroy you. Thats what destroyed Charles Darwin, his own theory of evolution. It was his own undoing. Darwin thought that women were inferior. He said, *A married man would be a poor slave, worse than a Negro*. Darwin was a racist. Now, Im not saying that all evolutionists are racists. Im just saying the reason that evolution became popular in the 1800s was due to the rampant racism in this country and around the world. Mayor Kore Wills and Amalie Dietrich (figure 4-23) were involved in gathering missing links for museums. What happened in the name of evolution in the 1800s would shock you. The results that have come from that philosophy are just unbelievable.

### ***The Fruit of Evolution***

What effect has evolution had? If you teach a child that he is an animal, what can you expect? There is a great magazine that you ought to subscribe to called *Creation Magazine*, published in Australia. One of the articles, from March to May of 1992, tells about the racism propagated toward the Aborigines in Australia. In the late 1800s, people were looking for a way to justify evolution and racism. They discovered that they needed numerous missing links to prove this theory. If monkeys turned into man, you would have to have a lot of missing links to change from one to the other. Of course, they couldnt find any missing links, but if they could find one they would be rich. The museums would pay a fortune to get one. These two (figure 4-23) found a neat way to get missing links and made a fortune. They went to Australia and dug up graves of the Aborigines. You see, the Aborigines that live in Australia have bigger eyebrow ridges than most people, and their jaws are a little heavier. So, they thought Ah ha! this is the missing link. They sold the bones to museums as missing links and made a fortune. Pretty soon they ran out of graves to rob; so they began shooting

the Aborigines and selling their bones to museums. They taught their students how to plug up bullet holes in freshly killed specimens. The article (figure 4-24) says, *A New South Wales missionary was the horrifying witness to the slaughter by mounted police of a group of dozens of men, women and children. Forty-five of the best heads were then boiled down, and the best ten were packed off for overseas.* The Aborigines are not inferior! They are not the missing link, but they were slaughtered, thousands of them, to provide specimens for museums.

The fellow pictured in figure 4-25 is named Otabenga. He was even put in a zoo. At the St. Louis Worlds Fair, he was put in a cage. He was taken away from a wife and two children. They said he was a missing link between the ape and man; so, in the 1904 World's Fair in St. Louis, they put him in a cage with the apes. I was up there some time ago, and the cage is still there where Otabenga was put on display. Otabenga went insane and killed himself. They thought that he was an inferior species. Matter of fact, they went down to Tasmania and shot Tasmanian Aborigines off the coast of Australia. Hundreds and hundreds, and even thousands were killed. The Smithsonian Institute has 33,000 sets of human remains in their basement right now as you are reading this. Many of them were taken while the people were still alive. They were so desperate to find missing links, so desperate to prove their theory that they murdered people to prove it. It was the philosophy of evolution that drove them.

The philosophy of evolutionism and humanism is what drove Karl Marx. Karl Marx wrote a brilliant Christian paper as a teenager. He was raised in a Christian home. Karl Marx went off to college, and a professor destroyed his faith. Boy, a lot of college professors have destroyed the faith of our youth. Karl Marx became a devout atheist and fathered communism. He said later in life, *My objective in life is to dethrone God, and destroy capitalism.* Karl Marx's total philosophy was based upon evolution. He even tried to dedicate his book, *Das Kapital*, to Charles Darwin. Written on the title page (figure 4-28) is: *To Charles Darwin from a sincere admirer, Karl Marx.* You see; we would not have communism today if it had not been for evolution succeeding in the middle 1800s. Communism is a direct offshoot of that philosophy, the theory of evolution. Karl Marx referred to evolution in his speeches over and over again. He said things like, *Evolution is how it happens*, or, *Evolution is on your side*, or, *We got here because of evolution.* It is the major theme all through his works. Just read any of his books, and you will understand. He said, *Evolution was the solution to how we got here.* That was his philosophy in life.

Evolution was John D. Rockefeller's philosophy of life. John D. Rockefeller, and many of the industrialists back in the 1800s, like Andrew Carnegie, believed in evolution. You see, evolution teaches that only the strongest survive, and that you should struggle for life, tooth and claw. Therefore, Rockefeller said, Hey, we are going to be the strongest. He couldn't stand competition. He wanted to wipe out the competition any way that he could. You are not going to understand the history of the 1800s, why the unions had to be formed to break up the monopolies, or why the trust busters, the anti-trust laws, and the child labor laws came into effect, until you understand the driving force behind it all. Much of that was motivated because of a response to the philosophy of evolution, and that's what had



happened to the industrialist. Get rich any way that you can, after all there is no God to whom you must give an account. That was Rockefellers problem.

Evolution was Theodore Roosevelts problem. Theodore Roosevelt believed in evolution. Roosevelt said, *We have an inferior species on this continent.* In America? Who were the inferior species in America, Theodore? Ah, he thought the Indians were inferior. Have you ever wondered why we broke all the treaties with the Indians? We made treaties with the Indians and then broke them. Why? Many of our leaders were strong evolutionists, and they thought that the Indians were savages, inferior species, and that it wasnt their right to have any land. They thought that the white man and the superior Europeans ought to have the land. In 1871, Congress scrapped all treaties with the Indians and moved them out to the worst property that they could find. You are not going to understand the tragic history of what happened to the Indians until you understand the philosophy of evolution and how it motivated our leaders.

It frustrated Sam Houston because he was married to a Cherokee woman. The Trail of Tears was where the Cherokee Indians were driven out of the Chattanooga area all the way to Oklahoma. One third of the entire nation died en route. That took place here in America as they were driven from their homes. Evolution is largely responsible for what happened to the Indians. How any Indian can believe in evolution just blows my mind. They should study their history because the evolution theory is what destroyed them.

Evolution was Vladimir Ilich Lenins problem. Lenin lead the Bolshevik Revolution in 1917 and took over Russia. He killed the Zar and his family in cold blood. There would not be communism in Russia today if had not been for Charles Darwins book on evolution. Charles Darwin wouldnt have done what he did if he not been influenced by Charles Lyell, and that stupid *geologic column*. Thats where it all started, a disbelief in Gods word and teaching that the world is millions of years old.

The fellow standing on the left in figure 4-30 is Mussolini. Benito Mussolini was a dictator in Italy during World War II. He was an outspoken evolutionist. He thought that the Italians were a superior species. The Italian troops slaughtered the Ethiopian troops, after all the Ethiopians were just black. They were inferior.

The fellow on the right is Adolf Schicklgruber. Have you ever heard of him? He couldnt spell Schicklgruber in kindergarten, so he changed his name to Hitler. Adolf Hitler was an outspoken evolutionist. He thought that the Germans were the superior race. He wrote the book *Mein Kampf*. You ought to read *Mein Kampf* and see how many times Hitler refers to racial crossing, superior races, or higher races. The major theme of the book is Germans are a superior race.

In early 1993 while preaching in Keene, New Hampshire, I had a free day when I was not scheduled to speak at any school; so, I went to the Keene State University Library. Whenever I have free time, I enjoy going to the library and reading books. Keene State has an entire section devoted to Adolf Hitler and the holocaust. I spent six hours talking to their librarian. He brought me book after book after book. I spent forty dollars photocopying pages. I asked the librarian, Sir, why did Hitler kill the Jews?

Why didnt he kill somebody else? Why didnt he target another group in particular? Why was he so intent on wiping out the Jews? The librarian said, Well, Hitler was going by a list . I said, Brother, Id like to see that list. He brought me book after book after book, and we found the list that Hitler used (figure 4-31). Have you ever wondered why he killed the Jews? Hitler believed in Aryan supremacy. He thought the Aryans were the superior race, which was the blond-haired, blue-eyed Nordic. He thought that the Germans were next. They were predominately brown-haired and blue eyed. He thought below the Germans there were other races such as the Slovaks, and the Mediterraneans. He thought the Slovaks were half Aryan and half ape. If you keep looking down the list, youll see Hitler thought the Orientals had slightly ape preponderance.. He thought that the black Africans were mostly ape, and the Jews were close to pure ape. Hitler thought that he was doing the world a favor by wiping out the inferior races so the superior races could survive.

That was Margaret Sangers philosophy of life as well: Wipe out the inferior. If Hitler had succeeded in killing the Jews, and he killed a lot of them, he would have gone after the blacks next. Hitler hated the blacks. Thats why the 1936 Olympics were held in Berlin, Germany. Guess who won the most gold medals, a black athlete from America by the name of Jesse Owens (figure 4-33). Hitler was enraged that a black man could beat the white man. Hitler walked out of the stadium in anger. The racism in Hitlers mind was because of his philosophy of life, evolution. He thought that the whites were superior. That is why the Germans have poured a fortune into their Olympic teams in the last fifty years. Many Germans still think that Aryan supremacy is the way that it ought to be. If you think this idea of racism is dead, you should carefully watch your evening news. An article from Skokie, Illinois, Associated Press, states: *A man told the authorities he chose a plastic surgeon from the phone book and killed him.* He just picked somebody out of the phone book and killed him? He did that because he thought the hair dressers and the plastic surgeons were diluting the Aryan beauty. They were changing the way people look so you could not distinguish the Aryans from other races. There are the Skin Head racists and the Nazis in Germany and in America. Its not dead. There are still those who believe in the Aryan supremacy.

A few years ago I was preaching in Waterloo, Ontario and after completing session number four, which covered this chapter, an old man came up to me at the end of the service. Speaking with a German accent, he said, Dr. Hovind, you are so right about what you were saying tonight. You are so right! Keep preaching it! I said, Brother, I intend to keep preaching it, but tell me, what do you mean? He said, I was raised in Germany and attended Adolf Hitlers schools. I was training to become an SS officer. They brainwashed us young people. They told us evolution is how we got here. I said, Brother, I intend to keep preaching it. If you think that I leave my family 60 percent of the year, travel around the country, sleep in strange motels beds every night, and eat at restaurants all of the time because I dont like my wifes cooking, or because I dont want to be with my gorgeous wife, youre mistaken. I would much rather be at home, but there is a war going on. Somebody must warn the troops.

This philosophy is what is undermining all of Christianity and devastating our country in many ways. Hitler killed the Jews by the millions. He just piled them up, piles and piles of Jewish bodies buried in graves. As they were killing the Jews, the rest of the world was doing practically nothing to stop it. They were trying to stop Adolf Hitler from coming to their country. Hitler used the young people to do it. He got them while they were young and brainwashed them into thinking Aryans are supreme. Its your duty to rule the world. You are a German. We need to get the weeds out of the gardens so the flowers can spread out. Thats what they taught them. Racism has almost wrecked this country and the world. In America we were just as racist. In 1938, Adolf Hitler offered to send the Jews to anybody that would take them. He said, Who wants the Jews? I will send them to you on luxury ships. President Roosevelt refused to take them. Did you know that boatloads of Jews were turned away from American shores while they were slaughtering them in Europe? We turned them away from our shores and would not give them political asylum. You should look at the 1930 immigration quotas from different countries. White Europeans, Oh, come on in. Blacks, No, sorry, stay out. Spanish, No, sorry, stay out. Jews, No, forget it. You cant come in. America had immigration quotas that stated if you are Jewish you will have to have \$10,000 to come into the country. Hitler said that if they wanted to leave the country they could leave, but they could only take \$4 with them. That was pretty rough wasnt it? Start off with \$4 and end up with \$10,000 after a two-week trip. It was racism.

God is not in favor of racism. The Bible states very clearly in Acts chapter seventeen that all nations are of one blood. If you will give money to send a missionary across the ocean to win a black man to Christ, and you will not go across the street to win a black man to Christ, or invite a black man to your church, you are a HYPOCRITE! Dont tell me that you love Jesus, because you dont. If this sounds like you, you are not acquainted with the love of God. Every race needs to be saved.

The same thing happened to Joseph Stalin (figure 4-35). Did you know that Joseph Stalin went to a Christian school as a child? While Joseph Stalin was in an Ecclesiastical Christian school, he read a book that influenced him for the rest of his life. The book that Joseph Stalin read that changed his whole philosophy of life was Charles Darwins book on the *Origin of Species*. Stalin decided that there is no God, and that man is the ultimate. Stalin was one of the most brutal dictators that the world has ever seen. Under Stalins reign, 60 million people were killed. Sixty million! How could he do that? Stalins autobiography states, *There are three things that we do to disabuse the minds of our seminary students of the myth that the world was created in six days. We had to teach them the age of the earth, the geologic origin, and Darwins teachings.* The earth is billions of years old. The *geologic column* is the way to interpret it, and Charles Darwins evolution is right. That is what they teach in order to be a good communist. Did you know that Russian teachers come to America to study education because the American educational system is considered the best in the world for teaching students these three principals. This prepares them to be good communists and to doubt the word of God.

Very few young people can make it all the way through high school and through the college secular systems and still remain confident that the Bible

is the word of God. There are too many people along the way that are determined to trip them up and stop them. I remember some of my professors. On my first day in sociology class, my professor asked: Are there any Christians in the room? I raised my hand along with two others. He said, So, youre a Christian? Do you believe there is a God? I said, Yes sir. He said, Tell me, can God do anything? I said, Yes sir. By the way, thats not true. There are some things that God cannot do. He cannot learn because He already knows it all. The professor said, Well, Mr. Hovind, if God can do anything, tell me, can God make a rock so big that He cant lift it? I said, Well, I dont know, but I know he can make one so big that you cant lift it! For the rest of the semester, it was just as if his goal in life was to destroy my faith. Very few young people make it through the humanist school system with their faith intact. Thats what happened to Joseph Stalin. Thats what happened to many in the past and thats what is happening here in the United States. The school system is the vehicle that is capturing our children and destroying their faith.

Joseph Stalin signed the executive order (figures 4-36 and 4-37) to execute the prisoners at the Katyn forest. Everyone should study the Katyn forest massacre. Germany conquered one part of Poland, and Russia conquered the other part of Poland. Poland was caught in the middle before America even became involved in World War II. Poland was wiped out from both sides. After capturing a large number of prisoners, they said, Hey Joseph, what do you want us to do with all of these prisoners? He said, Oh, they are just Poles; execute them. They put hoods over their heads, tied their hands behind their backs, jerked them up as hard as they could, put ropes around their necks, and marched them out to the edge of a hill, and one by one they shot 14,700 Polish officers in the back of the head. How can you shoot prisoners of war? What about the Geneva Convention? Hey Joseph, dont you know that its not nice to shoot people in the back of the head while they cant resist? Treaties and conventions are meaningless to a communist. They are only a means to get ahead, and they have no intention of keeping their treaties. If a lion makes a treaty with a lamb, should the lamb be excited? Hey Mr. Lion, see this paper? You signed this paper, and you said that you wasnt going to hurt me. Are you stupid in any other area, or is this the only one? The communists have no intention of keeping treaties. Communism will come back with a vengeance in Russia. Mark my word!

Communists teach their students a simple technique. They ask them to bring a board, a hammer, and a nail. The teacher says, Boys and girls, Im going to pound this nail into this board. Now, watch closely. He takes the hammer and slams it down on the head of the nail, BOOM! He says, Now, should I keep pushing on the hammer, PUSH, PUSH, PUSH? No, no, no, teacher. Draw the hammer back until you are ready to strike again. They pull back and strike again. Thats the way you pound a nail. You dont hit it and keep pushing because youll never drive it in that way. Then the teacher says, Thats right boys and girls this is the way that we are going to take over this world. We are going to strike and take a country, and then we are going to back up and say, Weve changed; were nice now. Send us your aid. Then, we are going to strike and take another one, and back up and say, Hey, weve changed. Send us more money please.

American capitalism has helped finance the communist take over of the world. Somebody is going to answer to God for this. Although it is true that people are starving in Russia, nothing has changed. When you feel that we should be sending them aid, ask yourself why they are producing six times more military hardware now than they were ten years ago? Six times! They are building hardware like crazy. Nothing has changed at all. We will have serious problems in the near future. One solution would be to tell your congressman or senator that the next time Russia says they need aid to offer to buy all of their tanks, helicopters, and nuclear submarines for ten cents on the dollar. If they built them for 100 billion, we will give them 10 billion. If they ever get back on their feet financially, we will sell them back for 20 billion dollars. Their starvation is caused by their government and their philosophy of life. Communism is destroying them.

When communism took over in China, ten thousand Christians a month were executed; yet, surprisingly, Christianity flourished. It is estimated that there are 55 million Christians in China today. You see, persecution makes the church thrive. Do you know what the Chinese Christians are praying for? The Chinese Christians are praying that persecution will come to America because they are worried that American Christians have become weak. They say, Man, America needs a good persecution, clean out the church, get some strong ones in there. That's what they are praying. Do you want God to answer those prayers?

When Pol Pot, the leader of the Khmer Rouge, took over Cambodia, they executed over one third of their own people. Some estimates are as high as half of their own people. He holds the Guinness Book of World Records for the largest genocide. One third of their own population? How could Pol Pot do that to his own people? How could they slaughter people by the millions in Cambodia? This took place from 1975 to 1979. It has also taken place in other countries. When America pulled out of South Vietnam, a slaughter took place. We don't understand the dangers of what is happening. It is tragic. Communists have explicit guidelines for revolution. Listed below are the guidelines they use when they want to take over a country.

### **Communist Guidelines for Revolution**

1. Corrupt the young. Overall, the youth of our nation are losing regard for established values and integrity.
2. Break down the old moral virtues. Today, the going thing is if it feels good, do it; this is in keeping with the humanist philosophy.
3. Encourage civil disorder. Civil disorder is rampant.
4. Divide the people into hostile groups. Division among the different races, religions, and political persuasions, among many other hot issues, such as abortion, have stirred and divided the country. It is the communists job to keep these pots boiling.
5. Get the peoples minds off their government by focusing their attention on athletics. Have you ever wondered why athletics is so popular in this country? Why does a guy make 5 million dollars for chasing a ball across a cow pasture. Have we gone crazy? I'm not against football. I like football. I don't understand it. Take the Super Bowl for instance. They will spend millions of dollars on it.

All those grown men out their fighting over that one ball, when they could afford to buy one of their own. We have gone sports crazy in this country.

6. Gain control of all the media. Media influence on the attitudes and beliefs of our people is incredible.
7. Destroy peoples faith in their leaders. We have some good leaders, but any good work they do is distorted so the people will lose faith in their abilities.
8. Cause the registration of all firearms. Do you know this is one of the communist plans to take control of the country? Register all firearms. That has been a reoccurring theme throughout history. Thats what Lenin called for, to disarm the people. Thats what Adolf Hitler wanted. Did you know that Adolf Hitlers gun control law, WORD FOR WORD, almost made it through our senate and house of representatives a couple of years ago? It would have become law here in the United States. Hitler required that you register your firearms. Joseph Stalin wanted registration of all firearms. GUN CONTROL! That is what the Branch Davidian compound attack was all about. David Koresh was a gun collector and a tax evader. Boy, they didnt like him, and one of the purposes for that raid was to scare the American people into submission. You better register your firearms. Make sure they know. They might come for you as they did for Koresh.

This is going to surprise you. I am in favor of gun control. You say, You Dr. Hovind. Oh, yes. Gun control is being able to hold the gun steady and hit the bulls eye. Thats gun control! Did you know that in Switzerland every household must have a fully automatic machine gun and 1,000 rounds of ammunition? Every year they must qualify with their machine gun, and at that time, the government issues them another 1,000 rounds. They shoot up a 1,000 rounds every year with a fully automatic machine gun. Everybody in Switzerland, including every child in the home, knows how to operate a fully automatic machine gun. Have you noticed that Switzerland has never been invaded? Would you invade a country like that? Gun control is stupid! The solution is criminal control. Child control? Yes, but not gun control. School control, politician control? Yes!

We have a *New Word Order* army coming on the scene. The *New World Order* is going to have an army and we are already training them. A lot of policeman and servicemen are going to be in it, and they are going to have black uniforms (figure 4-38), black helicopters, and black tanks. That was what the Waco raid was all about. Lets introduce these police to the world as good guys. No, they are not the good guys. You mark my word! The attack on the Davidian Compound had nothing to do with child abuse. What were they doing attacking the Koresh compound? Is that how you serve a search warrant? Do you open the door with ninety armed men? If somebody comes charging up to my house with a bunch of guns and ski masks on, Im going to think, Hey, these guys are not here to collect the rent. There is not question that Koresh was a weirdo, but the whole thing was a fiasco. There is a whole lot more to it than what has been put out by

the media. There are some great tapes out on what really happened at Waco, entitled Waco I and Waco II.

What President Bush did with the Los Angeles riots is interesting. President Bush called in federal troops. The constitution states that the government is not supposed to use the troops of America against American citizens. The incident at Waco when they brought in the army tanks and the army helicopters against American citizens was a violation of the US Constitution. Janet Reno should be criminally prosecuted for allowing it to happen. What happened at Waco was tragic. You are considered a cult if you believe the Bible and go to church too regularly, if you send your children to a private school, or you home school them. You are a part of the cult. They would look at you just as they looked at David Koresh. Sending US troops into Los Angeles riots was a test to see if they could violate the Constitution and to see if anyone would complain about it. Do you know what happened? Nobody complained about it.

Our Constitution is being gradually whittled away from under us. We must get people in battle who will defend the Constitution. The senators and representatives are sworn to uphold and defend the Constitution. By the way, the tenth amendment says that anything that is not in the Constitution is left up to the states. Joe Scarborough came to my house for about an hour when he was running for congressman in the state of Florida. I said, Joe, what is your basic philosophy of government? He said, The tenth amendment. The federal government should do what is in the Constitution and nothing else. I said, Joe, what's your philosophy of education? He said, The Federal government ought to get out of the education business. They should close the Department of Education and turn the powers back over to the state. I said, Brother, you have my vote. The federal government has no business, zero, being involved in welfare. They ought to totally close down the system and allow the states take care of that business. If the state or the county wants to pay people to have babies out of wedlock, that's the people's business that live in those states and counties. The federal government should not be involved in those things.

We have a huge government that is involved in things that should not be a part of their business. The National Endowment for the Arts is another one. Shut it down. If the local counties want to pay some artist for nudity then that is the business of the taxpayers of that county. I have been complaining for the past couple of weeks about the nude art in the Pensacola airport gift shop. The owner called me and said, You're the only person that has complained. I said to him, Six nude women in the shape of a skull? That's not art, that's pornography! The man at the airport has done nothing about it. The police have done nothing about it. If people don't stand up for what is right, corruption will take over. It's always been that way.

I am not for gun control. We ought to execute criminals for certain crimes. The prisons are overcrowded because a lot of them should have been executed. If everyone that should have been executed was executed it would do wonders for detouring crime and lowering the prison population. Some say, Yeah, but maybe they can be reformed. Maybe some can be, but that's not the point. We have many victims families out there who are suffering. They can't sleep at night thinking the guy is going to get out of prison some day. The best thing that could happen to a person that commits

murder or rape and to society is to kill them, quickly and publicly. That would solve a few problems, wouldn't it? We ought to have school control, and child control, and government control, but not gun control. Everybody ought to be required to have a gun and be a good shot with it, then we would have the same results as Switzerland.

This is all part of a long conspiracy that has been going on for several hundred years. I don't know about the smoke-filled rooms some place with a bunch of men conspiring to destroy the world. These are probably in existence but the conspiracy I am talking about is at a much higher level. It is Satan versus God. Satan wants to rule this world.

In 1776, a man by the name of Adam Weishaupt started a group called the *Illuminati*, the enlightened ones. Their symbol is on the back of our dollar bill (figure 4-40). The all-seeing-eye is on top of the pyramid. That was the symbol of the *Illuminati*. The date at the bottom of the pyramid is in Roman numerals, which translates to 1776. The Latin words, *Annuat Coeptis Novus Ordo Seclorum*, translate to, Announcing the birth of the *New World Order*. That is what it says on the back of our dollar bill in Latin. If you will notice behind the pyramid no grass is growing, just desert. In front of the pyramid there is vegetation growing. They say, Once we get the *New World Order* in place, and institute the all-seeing-eye on top which represents Lucifer, the light bearer will be in charge. Yes, the all-seeing-eye on your dollar bill represents Lucifer. They know that, and they fully intend for Lucifer to rule this world. The Bible states that he will for a while. When they bring the *New World Order* takes over, Lucifer is going to be in charge. If you look carefully at the dollar bill, you will notice the all-seeing-eye is not touching the pyramid. That's because he has not been put in place yet. The top of the pyramid is not done. Did you know that the Great Pyramid in Egypt, from which this is modeled, is an interesting structure? If you become hooked on this, you'll be hooked for life. I believe that the builders of the Great Pyramids were either Noah and Shem who built it after the flood. Or maybe it was Adam and Enoch who built it before the flood, and it was the only structure to survive the flood.. The Great Pyramid is positioned perfectly, north, south, east, and west. It is the only building in the world that is facing true north. It is thirteen and one half acres on its base. Most of the stones weigh at least seventy tons. We have no idea how they built it. We could not build it today. If you walk into the entrance of the great pyramid, you will walk down the broad way that leads down to the pit, or you can choose the narrow way that leads up to the king's chamber. Boy, that will preach, won't it? The symbolism for Christianity is all through the building. The sides of it have 144,000, smooth, polished limestone blocks. Ah, 144,000, that number is in the Bible. If you choose the narrow way, you go up 153 steps to the king's chamber. One-hundred and fifty-three! Jesus told the parable about them casting the net into the sea, and gathering 153 great fishes. He told another parable about casting the net in, and the gathering of all nations into the kingdom of God. Did you know that there is about 160 countries in the world right now? Ten are going to get together for the European common market. I suspect that when the Lord comes back there are going to be 153 nations in the world. That's interesting. If you look at the pyramid, the top of the pyramid is not there. The building came up and stopped. Jesus Christ is the chief corner stone, that's why. He is the stone



that the builders rejected, the stone mentioned in the book of Daniel that was cut out of the mountain without hands, and he has not finished the job yet. Someday Jesus will come back and finish the job.

Satan is trying to muscle in and take over and he will not have a problem. Before you get all worried about the *New World Order* and what is going to happen when all these problems come, read Psalms chapter two or Psalms chapter thirty-seven. It will calm you right down. God looks at these conspiracies and laughs. Psalm 2:1-4a says, ***Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh...*** There is a conspiracy going on, and these people are going to try to take over. It is surprising how far they have come in the last 200 years. It really is incredible.

The Great Pyramid is a neat subject to study. If you go up to the kings chamber you will notice an empty tomb with a red granite coffin. The coffin has the exact dimensions of the ark of the covenant. The angle of the shaft leading down or the angle leading up is twenty-six degrees, nine minutes and seven seconds. It is noteworthy, that this is the exact angle from the pyramid to Bethlehem, right to the second. Pretty neat isn't it? The Great Pyramid is positioned on the latitude line and the longitude line, which happens to be the longest ones in the world above sea level. If you were to find all of the latitude lines and pick the one with the most dirt above sea level, you will find that the pyramid sits on it. It is located geographically at the center of the world. I believe that it was build to be the first Bible in stone. There are many books available to read concerning the pyramids.

This is all part of the *New World Order*, which was a conspiracy started by Satan back in the garden of Eden. He wanted to rule the world. He has tried numerous times, through Babylon, Egypt, Greece, and the Roman Empire. What we are going to see during the end times is a revival of the Roman Empire in the *New World Order*. There are many good books on this subject that you ought to read to become familiar with what is happening. The pyramid has become the symbol for the *New World Order*. They stole that from God. God is going to be the one that will run this place one of these days. He is going to fix everything.

In the book of Revelation, it was prophesied that in the end times someone will come on the scene, and he will cause everyone to receive a mark in their right hand or in their forehead. You cannot buy or sell without the mark. The mark is going to be six-hundred three-score and six, 666. Now, why was it recorded 2,000 years ago that we would have a mark to buy or sell? Six-hundred three-score and six! This prophecy could not have been fulfilled a hundred years ago, but today it is being fulfilled right before our eyes. In 1972, IBM Corporation developed the bar code where the computer can actually translate lines and spaces into zeros and ones, a binary language, and read it. You will find those lines on the sides of virtually every product that is bought and sold. All they do is run them over the scanner. If you carefully study the bar code, you will find that there are two different ways to make each of the numbers. There are three ways to make a few of them. A white line is a zero and a black line is a one. The

computer reads these as zeros and ones and translates them to meaningful numbers or letters. Computers talk in binary language. They put those lines and spaces on the products in the form of a bar code. If you look at the first two lines on the bar code, they are longer than the rest and are unmarked. The system does not tell you what these numbers are. They are two skinny lines separated by a space. If you look to the center of the bar code you will find two more unmarked skinny lines longer than the rest with a single space between them. Look at the end of the bar code; again, you will find the same thing. It just so happens that two skinny lines with a space in between them is the computer binary code for the number six. Since 1972, the product bar codes have had a six at the beginning, a six in the middle, and a six at the end. Everything that you buy at the store is marked with 666. Isn't that interesting? These numbers do not provide any valuable data. Why would they put a six at the beginning, middle and end? Why didn't they choose a two or a four? It's on every product. Check it out and see for yourself.

The Bible says if you receive that mark and worship the beast, you are going to be in trouble. Read Revelation chapter 14 and you will see how they will be tormented and punished. What has happened since then? In 1990, they begin putting little magnetic strips inside our paper bills. If you examine a five, a ten, or a twenty dollar bill while holding it up to the light, you will see the strip about one-inch in on the left side. This is to prevent counterfeiting, but there are other things that they can do with it. They can detect, roughly, how much money is in your pocket when you walk past sensors, based on that strip. That technology was developed back in 1985. That's old stuff now. They can check for drug dealers at the airports with these little sensors. They can say, Ah, that guy is carrying thousands of dollars. We better find out why. Technology is far beyond that now.

A little microchip was developed to aid paralyzed people to walk. Plans were to inject this microchip in the muscles of paralyzed people and utilize a computer attached to their back to stimulate the muscles. Although the project failed as far as getting paralyzed people to walk, it succeeded in micro sizing the chip. This little chip can now be implanted. It is a little bigger than a grain of rice and can be injected under the skin with a hypodermic needle. A lot of pets are now marked this way. Several companies are now competing with each other using this technology. Infopet and others make this little chip so that you can inject it into your pet for identification. It's like a permanent tattoo that some pet owners use. Cattle farmers are now microchipping their cattle instead of using tags on the ears, tattoos or brands. The process is relatively inexpensive. For twenty, thirty, or forty dollars you can have your animal microchipped. Some of the Desert Storm pilots were microchipped so they could be tracked via satellite. The railroad uses this microchip technology on their box cars. This is part of the *Global Positioning System* or GPS as it is called. They have put up the last of the GPS satellites, and every square inch of world is now covered. If you have a GPS chip, they can find you with a satellite, within a few feet. A friend of mine, who worked at the railroad yard, gave me a plate that was mounted to the side of a box car. He said, Brother Hovind, you might want to scratch a few of the lines off because if you are carrying this in your suitcase while traveling on Delta or US Air, the

satellites will track it as if a box car is going 500 mph. This plate is about three inches by seven inches, but the ones that are injected into pets and humans are very small. These are little transplantable transponders.

This is amazing, frightening, and exciting all at the same time. We are going to get to see the end of this world. We are going to get to see the Lord come back in the real near future. How much tribulation must we endure first? I don't know. The Russian and the Chinese Christians think that they have already been through tribulation. I do not believe that America has any right to say, Hey God, you better not let us have any problems. We may just go through a few problems. It may get worse before it gets better. The United States is already divided into regions (figure 4-49). If you look carefully at your license plate, you will notice three little holograms. If the light is just right, you can see three little dots directly in the center, one above the other. Those little holograms denote a certain region. The entire world, including the US, is divided into regions for when the *New World Order* takes effect.

FEMA is already developing detention camps to put prisoners in when they do not agree with the *New World Order*. I believe that a lot of senators and representative are going to be the first ones in those camps. You see, America is bankrupt. The world bankers already own the world. The national debt exceeds the value of the country. We are bankrupt, but they cannot really cash in and foreclose on the mortgage because too many people still have guns. The last obstacle to complete financial collapse of our system, and the establishment of the *New World Order*, is getting rid of the guns in America. That's why we have some senators and representatives in there saying, The second amendment is to protect your right to have guns so that you can go hunting. No, no, no! The second amendment is not about duck hunting. The purpose of the second amendment, the right to bear arms, was so the citizens could protect themselves from their own government. You see, if the government fears the people, you can have a good government, but when the people fear the government, you have tyranny. Everybody ought to be allowed to have an M1 tank in their front yard if that's what they want to without having it registered. You might ask, What about all of the drug dealers? If anybody commits a crime with a gun they ought to be executed. That would solve the problem. Don't take away the gun; take away the criminal. In France, where they used the guillotine years ago, a man was about to have his head severed. One of the citizens said, Isn't this terrible punishment? This guy rapes one person, and you are cutting his head off? Somebody else said, Well, yes. It's pretty hard punishment, but one thing is for sure, the people that walk up these stairs don't commit that crime again.

We are so close to the *New World Order* taking effect. It is frightening that Christians are asleep on their watch and not warning other people to become prepared for what is about to happen. We are going to be caught asleep. Hughes Aircraft Corporation developed strips that go over the top of the highways for accumulating toll. If you have a little chip on the dash of your car and drive through one of these things, your toll will automatically be deducted from your account. Imagine that. A toll booth where you do not have to slow down. There are a lot of these in Los Angeles, California and Dallas, Texas. As you pass under the toll booth, look at the back side of

the strip over the top, and you will see cameras mounted for each lane. These cameras photograph and check your license plate to see if the car is wanted, or stolen, or if the registration is expired. They can check eight cars per second at 100 mph. It is unbelievable what the computer can do that runs these systems. The technology is in use right now. Big brother is going to be watching, and there will be no place to hide. The tribulation that is coming upon this world is unbelievable. The Bible states in Revelation that there is going to be great tribulation such as was not since the beginning of the world. Do you think what happened in Russia was bad? They exterminated 60 million people. Do you think what happened in Germany was bad? They exterminated 6 million people. Do you think that Cambodia had tribulation with half of their population being killed? Just wait until you see the great tribulation! Nothing like it has ever happened in the world. Millions, and probably billions of people are going to die.

The globalist, the Council of the Committee of Three Hundred, has as one of their goals to reduce the world population from six billion to one-half billion people. There are too many people here that cannot be controlled; so get rid of them. That's why AIDS was purposefully developed in a Maryland laboratory to wipe out population. A manufactured vaccine? Dr. Hovind, do you know what you are talking about? I know exactly what I am talking about. I have loads of documentation to back this up.

The Bible states in Hosea 4:6a, ***My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge...*** All through history, Christians have been sheep for the slaughter. Our duty is to sweetly and kindly obey Christ and to follow his will. That's our job. We may see some persecution here in this country. I hope not. Before we go under and while we still have a free country, why should we have to pay for evolution to be taught in the school system? Evolution is the philosophy that drives Humanism, Communism, Nazism, and Socialism (figure 4-49). There is a global society coming, and these people are very upset that we do not teach our youth evolution.

Paul Hoaglar, the head of the Nebraska Board of Education, a former Nebraska senator, said to Everette Silivans lawyer, *Fundamentalist parents have no right to indoctrinate their children in their beliefs. We are preparing their children for the year 2000 and life in a global one-world society (New World Order, the same thing that's on the dollar bill), and those children will not fit in* (Figure 4-50). Home schoolers and Christian school parents mark my word. We are number one on the list to go spend time in those detention camps while they take our children and reeducate them. That's exactly as Hitler did. The camps are already built. Right here in America they have converted some of the old military bases into some of these camps. Egland Air Force Base has a big one right down the road from where I live. At least I will be close to home. I can catch up on my Bible reading, and other reading, if they will allow it. Problems are coming!

Persecution has already begun against creationists in the public school system. It is shocking to see what is happening to many of our public school teachers and how they have lost their jobs because they were creationists. John Patterson said in the Journal of the National Center for Science Education, Fall issue, *Creation should be discriminated against...No advocate of such propaganda should be trusted to teach science classes or administer science programs anywhere or under any circumstances.*

*Moreover, if any are now doing so, they should be dismissed* (figure 4-51). Just because they believe in creation, fire them? Oh, absolutely! Look what Kendrick Frazier, an Iowa professor said in the Fall 1983 issue of *Skeptical Inquirer*, *The professor has the right to fail any student, no matter what his grades are, if the professor finds out he is a creationist. If they find out later that he is a creationist, they can retract his degree* (figure 4-52) Take his degree away from him? There is persecution! If you believe in creation, the establishment does not want you, because along with creation comes the concept of a creator, and Satan wants you to think that he is the boss.

It is time to become motivated! Christians are too busy playing. We are being distracted by all sorts of things instead of the real causes. Davids brothers said to him, David, are you going to go fight Goliath? Hes pretty big, isnt he? David said, Is there not a cause? What is your cause for living? What do you think about? What do you want to accomplish with your life? What is your driving force in life? Get a bigger house? Get a fancier car? What drives you? What drives me is helping to defeat evolution and helping Christians to have a renewed faith in Gods word. I think about it at night. Sometimes I wake up in the middle of the night and make notes, Gotta make a slide on this, to show this fact. It drives me because evolution is the root to many of the evils we are fighting. Instead of fighting abortion, pornography, and euthanasia, realize that evolution is the philosophy behind them all. We could kill them all with one chop of the ax and destroy this bad philosophy out of their lives. We need to be busy in doing many things. We need to be telling teachers, Hey, you can teach creation in the classroom. I go to public schools all the time, I do not mention God or the Bible, I just go in there to destroy evolution, thats all. I do not talk about the Bible, but I sure tell them that evolution is a false religion.

Have you ever seen those little mobiles that hang over the top of a baby crib? You wind them up, and the baby watches with amazement. Do you know what the purpose of those things is? Its to keep the baby distracted so he does not think about hollering and screaming. Right? Do you know the purpose of many things in this world is to keep Christians distracted? Satan has done a great job. We are so complacent, Wow! Look at this football go clear across the field. Oh, wow! Neat! We are being distracted. There is a war going on. How about the picture in figure 4-53, is this your god? Is this what drives you? Is this what you think about all the time, a ball? Is every spare minute spent playing with a ball? There is nothing wrong with sports. I like sports, but is that your primary purpose for living? Hey, how many hours have you spent in athletic events, and how many hours have you spent reading your Bible, or trying to win someone to Christ? We need to get people involved in the proper causes.

Ecclesiastes 5:10a is an interesting verse, it says, ***He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver...*** You see, there is no way to satisfy the desire for what you love the most. You are going to want more of it. If you like a big house, you will want a bigger house. If you like a car that goes fast, you will want one that goes faster. Have you ever seen those guys that race those cars? They are always tinkering with them to get them to go a little faster. You are never going to be satisfied. Never! That thing that you chase after will never satisfy you. He that loveth sports shall not be satisfied with sports. You are being hooked. You are being addicted. Thats why

Jesus said, ***Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.*** Just fall in love with the right thing. Fall in love with Jesus, and you will never be satisfied. You will always want to know more about him. You will want to read your Bible more. You will want to tell more people about him. We need to get busy. The solution to Americas problem is 2 Chronicles 7:14, ***If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn (off their wicked TV program) from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.*** Would you like God to fix America? The problem with America is not the queers, or the prostitutes, or the drug addicts, or the politician. The problem with America is the Christians. We are not doing our part. God expects the heathen to act like a heathen, but when his children act like a heathen he has to bring judgment. God told Abraham that he would spare the whole city of Sodom and Gomorrah if he could find ten righteous people. There was Lot and his wife, and at least four daughters that we know, that lived there with Lot. Two of the daughters were married, that makes eight. Lot had been there for years; surely, Lot had won two people to the Lord. No, Lot did not lead anybody to the Lord. He could only bring four out, and one of them looked back and was turned into a pillar of salt. Its time to become motivated.

What should we do, you ask? If America should become a communist country or a dictatorship, which we inevitably will unless a miracle happens in the very near future, we should obey those that have the rule over us just as it says in Romans chapter thirteen. Keep in mind, that passage was written from jail, so apparently, you do not obey them in everything. If they say that you have to stop preaching, then you must disobey that. God has the higher authority. You obey those that have authority over you as long as it does not conflict with Gods authority over you. You should follow the examples of people like Jesus. He grew up under Roman control. Moses and Joseph grew up under hostile governments. Daniel, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego all lived under an ungodly king. You can live for the Lord under any circumstances. Some are a little rougher than others. I have enjoyed the freedom in America that I have had so far, but if we lose it, keep preaching, and winning souls to Christ. You may say, They might put me in jail. Yes, they sure might. Most of the Bible was written from jail. I guess we would be in pretty good company, wouldnt we?

What do we do now? We are not yet under totalitarian rule. Here is a to do list of things that will help.

1. Win souls.
2. Teach others the gospel.  
Teach people the truth; teach a Sunday School class; work a bus route; do something to spread the knowledge of Jesus Christ. Everybody ought to have a ministry. If you are saved, do something to spread the gospel. Thats the Great Commission.
3. Start a car/van/bus route.  
If you come to church every week with just your family in your car, and you have an empty seat, you are not doing it right. You ought to bring somebody with you. If you cannot get two big ones, get

- you a little one. Buy him a hamburger after service. Find someone to influence for the Lord.
4. Start a tape lending ministry.  
Maybe you do not know how to preach on creationism. I do, so get my tapes and books, and pass them out to somebody.
  5. Get involved in textbook selection.  
We are supposed to try to influence people for the Lord. Do whatever you can. Write letters. Get on the textbook selection committee. I wish we had some intelligent people on that committee, then we could have books that do not teach evolution.
  6. Write textbook publishers about objections.
  7. Run for the school board.
  8. Write letters to the editor.
  9. Cancel cable TV and newspapers (give time and money to God)
  10. Pick a public school and:
    - a. Pray for teachers by name.  
Many school teachers are frustrated with what is happening. They are not the enemy. Pass out a creation video tape to them. You can win them, one by one over to creationism and Christianity. Just as Paul did on Mars Hill, he reached the heathen with creation. When you are dealing with Jews, you talk about Scripture, and the Messiah. When you go to the heathen, you must do it as Paul did on Mars Hill. I want to talk to you about the unknown God, the creator of the universe. That's where you must start. Scripture does not phase them.
    - b. Send them a teachers packet.  
These are good tapes to convert teachers over to creationism and ultimately Christianity.
    - b. Start a Bible club release time.  
A lot of counties have release time. That's where they have to allow the students out of school for an hour to have Bible study.
    - d. Show tapes (home, school, slumber parties).
    - e. Encourage teachers to get out of the NEA.  
You say, I'll lose my insurance. Well, then don't have any insurance. God will honor a right decision. Start a new organization. There are already several good organizations just for teachers.

Here is a little story in closing this chapter. During the civil war a big old country boy from Alabama signed up to join the Rebs. He was going to go fight the Yankees. After he went through bootcamp, he got his rifle and back pack and all that good stuff, and went off to war. The Sergeant said, Okay boy, you stay right chear in this here trench. He said, But Serge, I didnt come to stand in the trench. I came to fight them thar Yankees, and them Yankees are right over thar. The Sergeant said, Yep! Son, I know. The Yankees are dug in, and we are dug in. Nobody has moved for four weeks. We are staying right chear. The young soldier marched back and forth in the trench, and got madder by the minute. He had not come to sit in the trench. He came to fight Yankees. He was marching back and forth, and finally he couldnt take it any more. He dropped his back pack and his

rifle. He jumped up out of the trench, and ran screaming and yelling across no-mans land, straight for the Yankees trench. A one-man charge. The Yankees were over there looking at this big old country boy running through the mud. Nobody even shot at him. They were too stunned. This big old country boy jumped down into the trench, grabbed the first Yankee he saw, and knocked him out cold. He picked up the Yankee, jumped out of the trench, and ran back across no mans land to the Rebel trench. The Yankees did not dare shoot. He had one of their men. He jumped back into the Rebel trench. All the Rebs gathered around and said, What is that! He said, This heres a Yankee. They said, Yeah, we know. We can see that. Where did you getem? The big old country boy said, I gotem over yonder. Thars a whole bunch more over thar. You all coulda got one ifn ya wanted one.

I am afraid we are going to get to heaven one day, and some people are going to have crowds of people around them that they lead to the Lord or influenced for Christ. Some other people are going to come up and say, Whar dew get all them pecanverts? I gotem down yonder on the earth. You all coulda had one ifn ya wanted one.

We just need to get busy. Jesus said to preach the gospel to every creature, baptize them, and teach them to go out and do the same. It could not be simpler. We are not doing it. We are losing. The Bible says in Proverbs 11:30b, ... **he that winneth souls is wise**. I guess that means the corollary would be, He that does not win souls is not wise.

Are you trying to influence anyone for the Lord? What are you doing with your life that is of any eternal value? Is your whole life wrapped up in a ball? Who is going to care in a million years? What are you investing yourself in? Let me challenge you. If you are not saved, give your heart to the Lord. Just bow your head and ask the Lord to save you. Just say, Lord, forgive me. Im a sinner. Save me dear Lord. He will come into your heart and save you. Its amazing the changes that he can make in your life. If you are saved, what are you doing for the Lord? Do you have a ministry? Are you doing anything besides warming up a chunk of pew a couple of times a week? What are you doing for the Lord? If its not much, why dont you say, Lord, Im sorry. Forgive me. Help me to serve you.

## Chapter 5

### *The Hovind Theory*

What about pangaea? Were the continents ever connected? Maybe you were taught in school that it is a proven fact that the continents were connected at some point in time. School children are still being taught this theory. The only evidence to support this theory is that Africa and South America look as if they would fit together. Although the shapes give the



appearance they could fit together, it is pure coincidence, based upon the water level. If you raise or lower the oceans, the shapes of the continents change. I could tell you that your home is perfectly parallel to Hardees right down the highway. If you move two buildings together that perfectly fit side by side this must prove that they broke apart 80 million years ago when the highway oozed up between them. Shapes fitting together as a jigsaw puzzle does not mean anything. If you look at a map of the earths crust, you will see many different mountain ranges and plateaus. The appearance of the land would drastically change if the oceans were not as deep. The second evidence that is given for pangaia is the idea that the continents are drifting. There is a little movement, but that doesnt prove that it has been happening for millions of years. It could have started one hundred years ago. Until recently, we haven't had the technology to measure such movement. Another fact given to back up their theory is that there are similar fossils on each continent. Africa and South America have the same kinds of fossils. This is true, but it still doesnt prove that they were ever joined together.

Many times there are two ways to look at things. Dont forget the farmer back in chapter four. It might be that there was a world-wide flood, and the dead animals floated all over the place and then settled down as the water level subsided. Camels have been found at the North Pole. That doesnt prove that the North Pole was at the equator in times past. It might prove that there was a flood that floated these animals up to the North Pole. There might be another way of looking at things. Therefore pangaia is a far cry from a proven fact.

Evolutionists ask, What about the ice age? Isnt it obvious that glaciers came all the way down to Kansas City, Missouri? Yes, its pretty obvious. I have flown over many of these areas. I have studied the Terminal Moraines, the Lateral Moraines, the Drumlins, the Kettle Lake, and the Canadian Shields. There was an ice age, but it wasnt hundreds of thousands of years ago. Later in this chapter, we discuss how the ice age fits into Scripture.

Another question the evolutionists ask is, What about the mammoth? You know, those big huge hairy elephants. By the way, many mammoths are found frozen standing straight up (figure 5-1). Some people are somewhat confused about the mammoth. Not only are they found standing up; they suffocated, which means they didnt drown. They were frozen so fast that the food in their stomach and teeth is still fresh. The food is still green as if they just ate it! Not only that, the food is tropical food, buttercups, etc. Buttercups at the North Pole? It is estimated that there are over five million mammoths still frozen around the north polar region. People have been known to dig them up just for their ivory tusks.

A gentleman from Waterloo, Ontario told me, Brother Hovind, my dad lived at the north slope of Alaska, and he ate mammoth meat. They dug one out of the ground, cut the meat off, and ate it. They said it tasted like roast beef and it was still as fresh as the day it was killed.

A lot of people have been curious about what happened to the mammoths. Another friend of mine who works on an oil rig lives on the north slope of Barrow, Alaska. He sent me a very fragile piece of frozen wood. They had drilled down under 1,200 feet of permafrost and brought up a piece of freeze-dried wood. As they were drilling, they drilled through several

hundred feet of wood. A forest is buried under 1,200 feet. What happened to the forest? How did it get down there? Baron Toll, the Arctic explorer, found a frozen, ninety-foot tall plumb tree on the New Siberian Island, which is 600 miles north of the Arctic Circle. This tree still had huge plumbs and leaves on it.

Mammoths do not have any sweat glands. They were not designed for cold climates. You may ask, What about their long hair, doesn't that prove they lived in cold climates? No. Before the flood, there was no cold climates in the world. It was seventy-five degrees from pole-to-pole. The temperature was perfect everywhere. The mammoths long hair would be neither a help nor a hindrance if it were seventy-five degrees. A lot of animals that live in the jungle have real thick, dense hair. Hair might be an insulator from the heat. The mammoths were not designed to live in cold climates, in spite of their long hair. Mammoths are not the only frozen animals being found. Bobcats, jaguar, lynx, and camels, among others, have been found frozen around the north polar region.

I was curious about these findings, especially about the mammoth. How do you freeze a mammoth? I called all sorts of people such as the Birds Eye Frozen Food people in New York. I figured since they supply us fresh frozen foods, they should know something about freezing meats. I talked with a physicist and people in the meat packing houses, and asked each of them the same question: If you stuck an elephant in a freezer, what would happen? They said, Well, you would have a crowded freezer. I asked, How long would it take to freeze an elephant? The mammoth is the same size as an elephant except for having thirty-inch long hair all over his body. These scientists said, In order to freeze a mammoth so fast that the food in his stomach would still be fresh, you would have to have something much colder than a normal freezer. A normal packaging house freezes meat at zero degrees. It takes about twenty-four hours to freeze twelve inches of meat. If you have ever frozen or thawed out a large chunk of meat such as a turkey, you know that it takes about twenty-four hours to freeze or thaw the meat. In order to freeze the mammoth so fast that his stomach contents are frozen before they rot, you would have to freeze them within three to four hours. Scientists who have studied this issue concluded that it would take about five days to freeze a mammoth in a freezer. How do you freeze one in three hours? The only way to freeze him in three hours is to dip him in something much colder, like liquid nitrogen, which is 300 degrees below zero. It never gets 300 degrees below zero on earth. The coldest recorded temperature was 127 degrees below zero. Where are you going to get something 300 degrees below zero to freeze five million mammoths, some of them standing up? They are not mangled as if they were run over or something. They didn't drown or become smashed by a glacier. What happened to them? Keep this thought in mind -- it takes something about 300 degrees below zero to accomplish this feat. First, it is important that you are aware of several different scientific facts to prepare you; then, I will share with you the *Hovind Theory* how I think it happened.

I cannot prove my theory to anyone -- it is just a theory. I will provide a model as food for thought and then you decide whether you think it is feasible.

## ***Inverse Square Law***

The second thing that you need to keep in mind, in addition to the low temperature required to freeze the mammoths with stomach contents still undigested, is a law in science known as the *Inverse Square Law*. The *Inverse Square Law* states: If two objects are attracted to each other, like two magnets, or the earth and the moon, by gravity pulling them together, the force of attraction between those objects is directly proportional, or is inversely proportional to the square of the distance between them. In English, that means, if you half the distance, you quadruple the attraction. If you narrow the distance between two attracted objects to one third of the original distance, there would be nine times the original amount of attraction. The formula would be one over the distance squared. The closer that they get, the stronger the pull becomes. The *Inverse Square Law* applies when dealing with several things such as gravity, magnetism, light, and girls. You see, when you half the distance the attraction is quadrupled. Many fellows have not understood that until it was too late. When you are a certain distance away, you may say, Oh wow! She's pretty. When you are half the distance, you are now four times as attracted. When you half the distance again, you are now sixteen times as attracted. Eventually, like two strong magnets they reach a point where you cannot keep them apart. It is safer to stay about ten feet away and that solves most of the problems.

The next thing to keep in mind is that when a top is spinning, it maintains an equal equilibrium. When it is bumped from the outside, it will wobble for a while, but it will recover and spin smoothly at a new angle. If you graft out the number of degrees the top went over and the number of degrees it came back, it follows a definite curve called the *recovery curve of a spinning top struck by an outside object*. Wow! I wonder how they come up with that name?

It has been observed that, apparently, the earth has wobbled throughout time. The North Pole has wandered around. The recovery path of the spinning top is the same as the path the earth has followed. The earth has wobbled so many degrees and has come back, wobbled, come back, and so on. It is now leaning over. They can tell by looking at temples around the world such as Stonehenge, Eudozus, and Amen-Ra. These different temples were built to worship the sun at Summer Solstice on June 21, when the sun is as high above the equator as it gets. These buildings are at different angles today and no longer line up with the sun.

Some people, such as George Dodwell, have conducted research on this subject and have concluded that the earth must have been struck by something about 4,400 years ago. About 2,300 BC the earth was struck by an outside object. Today, the earth is leaning over about twenty-three and one half degrees, which is what causes our seasons. By the way, the seasons as far as spring, winter, and harvest, are not mentioned in the Bible until after the flood. Genesis 8:22 is the first mention of cold weather. They didn't have any cold weather in the Garden of Eden. The pre-flood world had perfect temperature all year long. The earth may have been spinning without being tilted in its orbit around the sun. They may have always had twelve hours of daylight and twelve hours of darkness, which means they would not need a watch. They always knew what time it was by looking at the sun because it

would always be in the same spot at the same time every day. There were also no seasons, and the earth's magnetic field was much stronger back in those days. The magnetic field is getting weaker and weaker with time. It was probably twenty times stronger in Adam and Eve's day. If the magnetic fields were twenty times stronger, man has enough iron in his body to be able to feel which way is north. We could be our own compass, which means we would never become lost. Adam and Eve never knew what it was like to have that disoriented feeling of not knowing where they were. God designed the original creation to take care of all the problems that we have today. All the anxieties that we have were unknown to them. They didn't have to worry about utility bills. They didn't have to worry about going to the grocery store. All their food was growing all around them. They didn't pay rent. They didn't need a house. There was no need to be protected from the elements because there were no storms, or bad weather. Insects wouldn't bite. They didn't have to worry about mosquitoes. Everything was vegetarian according to Genesis 1:30. All the animals were friendly. It was an unbelievable paradise. That is what the world started off to be like until sin messed it up.

Another factor to keep in mind is that there are comets (figure 5-3) that fly around in space. Most comets are extremely cold snowballs, while some are rocks and iron. The reason God made snow is so you can pack it into a ball and throw it at somebody. If you throw a snowball too fast it will break apart. Instead of hitting in one piece it will come apart. If you freeze a ball of water to make a frozen cannon ball and you roll it down the barrel of a cannon and light the fuse, it will turn back into a puff of snow before it exits the barrel. At a certain velocity, it will come unglued. Ice in space is extremely cold. The temperature in outer space ranges from 300 to 400 degrees below zero, and some estimates are as high as 450 degrees below zero. Negative 459.6 degrees below zero is absolute zero. Many of the comets flying around space are about 300 degrees below zero. These are real cold snowballs.

### ***The Hovind Theory***

This is my theory, which I call *The Hovind Theory*. I believe that Noah was building the ark because God had warned him that he would destroy the world in 120 years. As Noah was building the ark, God sent a comet or knew that one was coming toward the earth. It was an ice meteor that came racing through space. As it was progressing through our solar system, some of the fragments broke off and became trapped in what is now some of the rings around Saturn, Uranus, and Neptune. All three of these planets have ice rings around them that are still not stabilized, indicating that they have not been there for millions of years. These rings are still separating the lighter particles from the heavier particles from the *Pointing Robertson Effect* of the solar wind.

Some of those meteors may have hit the moon and caused the craters on the moon. What made the craters? On Mars and the moon there are actually flow marks as if there was water flowing. Maybe the ice meteor hit the planets, made a crater, and then melted in the heat of the day, because in the heat of the day the surface of these planets is about 250 degrees. The

ice meteor would have melted, vaporized, and vanished into space leaving behind the crater with no meteorite present in the craters.

As the last meteor was coming toward the earth, it would not have to hit rather it would only need to come near because of the *Inverse Square Law*. The closer it got the stronger the pull of gravity and the faster it traveled. It continued travel to closer and move faster until it reached a point called *Rosches Limit*, which is about 2.44 times the diameter of the larger planet. About 20,000 miles out, the meteor exploded in space and turned into a puff of snow. Ice that is 300 degrees or below becomes magnetic and can be picked up by a magnet. At this low temperature, this magnetic ice would be sucked to the north and south pole because of the intense magnetic field. That would cause a very rapid snow fall of some very cold snow, about 300 degrees below zero, at the North and South Poles. It is noteworthy that the earth has a geographic North Pole that we spin around, and it has a magnetic North Pole located in northern Canada about 1,200 miles away. The ice age appears to be centered around the magnetic North Pole. For instance, there were glaciers further south into America than in Asia. This is an interesting thought to keep in mind.

Another thought to keep in mind is that the South Pole is considered a desert because they receive less than ten inches of precipitation a year; yet, the ice is up to 14,000 feet thick at the South Pole. Either it took millions of years to accumulate 14,000 feet of ice or it was dumped there all at once. It may have taken several weeks for all of the ice and snow to fall from the meteor. If there were volcanic activity going on at the same time the flood was taking place there would be layers of ice and ash mixed together. Today, geologists drill up core samples to check the different levels of ice in an effort to try to find something that supports their theory of the earth being millions of years old. Consider the frozen trees found at the North Pole. Perhaps the snow and ice were dumped very rapidly.

I believe that it was a beautiful day as it always was before the flood, about seventy-five degrees. The mammoths were at the North Pole chewing their tropical vegetation, eating their buttercups, and all of a sudden it began to snow (figure 5-4). One of the mammoths looked at the other one and said, Herman, its snowing! Its never done this before. This is cold snow, Herman. This is real cold snow! It feels about 300 degrees below zero to me. Lets get out of here. Where could they go? Everywhere they ran, the snow was getting deeper and deeper. Pretty soon they were trapped in the snowdrifts, and they couldnt even fall down. Have you ever been in snow so deep that you couldnt fall over? The mammoths were trapped in the snowdrifts, which buried, then suffocated and froze them within three hours. This is just a theory that seems to fit some of the facts. As the snow deepened, it began to push toward the equator, and the glaciers went racing across the Northern Hemisphere, not three or feet a year like they move today (figures 5-5 and 5-6). The glaciers were roaring across the terrain, possibly hundreds of miles an hour. As the ice pushed out further and further, it carved out all the glacial effects we now see today. They were then covered by two giant cold spots. When cold air meets cold air it rains.

According to Genesis 1:6-7, the earth had a canopy of water around it to protect it. When the cold air from these ice caps began to go out and meet

the warm air, it made that canopy of water collapse, and it rained forty days and forty nights. Between the ice coming from outer space, the rain coming down to earth from the canopy, and one more source I will discuss next, the earth was completely covered with water from pole to pole. Some was liquid water and some was frozen water.

The Bible also states in Genesis chapter 7 that the fountains of the deep were broken up. Inside the earth's crust resides a lot of water. That is why you can drill down and strike a well. That is why geysers shoot off, Old Faithful for instance (figure 5-7). There are about eight different geysers around the world named Old Faithful. Geysers shoot out scalding hot water. That's why that near Calistoga, California, people can drill down and use those geothermal vents to turn turbines that produce electricity. If the fountains of the deep were all broken up, maybe this all happened at the start of the flood or because of the flood. Maybe it all happened because of the meteor hitting the earth. If hot water came shooting out of the earth's crust, it would cause some problems on the earth. If you dumped a million gallons into a lake, what would happen to the fish? It would kill them in an instance, wouldn't it? The reason would be due to a condition known as thermal shock. Fish have a certain temperature change that they can withstand per minute. If the temperature changes too quickly, it will kill them. Thermal shock would take place if hot water from beneath the ocean came shooting up into the ocean, and it would kill things in the immediate vicinity.

It is interesting that all around the world there are little tiny diatoms in the ocean (figure 5-9). Diatoms are little microscopic critters. Although they are so tiny that one cannot see them without the aid of a strong microscope, they are beautiful. They have a glass body. Diatoms are all over the ocean, and are very common. When Diatoms become tired of living, they die and fall to the bottom of the ocean. Then when their offspring die, they fall to the bottom, and so on. Pretty soon a layer of Diatoms cover the bottom of the ocean. The Diatoms are rough, angular glass, but they are so small that they feel soft and silky. Diatoms are actually used in shoe polish, car wax, and swimming pool filters. You can buy bags of diatomaceous earth at your local hardware store.

It takes about one-thousand years to accumulate an inch of Diatoms in the bottom of the ocean. There are places like Lompoc, California where the diatomaceous earth is so thick, about 1,500 feet thick, that they dig it out with bulldozers and sell it. Wait a minute! If it takes one-thousand years to accumulate one inch deep, and it is 1,500 feet thick now, wouldn't that prove it has taken millions of years to accumulate that amount of Diatoms? Yes, unless there was a catastrophe like a thermal shock. If the temperature changed too fast in the ocean, all the Diatoms would die at the same time in that area, and they would snow to the bottom. In 1976, workers in Lompoc, California were digging in the diatomaceous earth quarry and found the bones of an eighty-foot baleen whale standing on its tail (figure 5-10) in the diatomaceous earth. Now, hold on just a second! If it takes a thousand years to get an inch of diatomaceous earth, did that whale balance on his tail for millions and millions of years while it slowly filled in around him? Wouldn't you think that is a little far fetched? Do you think that this could be evidence of a catastrophe of some kind? You can literally extract billions of

fish fossils out of the diatomaceous earth core there in California. They haul it out by the truck loads. You can buy these fossils for ten cents a piece.

The obvious interpretation would be that there was a catastrophe. The same thing is true with the chalk cliffs of Dover, England (figure 5-11). In Dover the chalk is three hundred feet thick in places. It is pure chalk just like what you use to write on the chalkboard. Chalk is also a microscopic critter that lives in the ocean. When you write on a chalkboard you are rubbing off some of the seashells onto the chalkboard. That's what leaves the yellow and white streaks behind. Don't try to tell me that all the chalk in the world decided to go to Dover, England to die, and this continued for millions of years just so that they could purposely create a big layer of chalk. I think that there is a better explanation like a thermal shock. Hot water came gushing out, killed the chalk in that location.

Noah was floating on top of the water in the ark, and the flood lasted just over a year. As Noah was floating in the ark, hundreds and hundreds and thousands of sediment layers were being deposited below him in the ocean. The earth being completely covered with water and the moon creating tides would cause the tides to lift and settle the ocean. The tides would race around the world changing every six hours and twenty-five minutes causing the tides to reshuffle the sediments on the ocean floor. You can get a jar of dirt out of your yard, put water in it, and shake it up and set it down. The dirt will settle out into layers every time. Gravel will go to the bottom, then sand, clay, and finally top soil. It will create a perfect soil profile every time. The layers of the earth were caused by the flood from the fountains of the deep breaking up, lava layers being there. There would be layers of fish, dirt, and the various other types of sediment. Animals of similar density would tend to be buried together. The reason most dinosaur bones are found in similar layers is most dinosaurs are lizards, and weigh about the same as lizards. The reason birds are found on the top soil of the *geologic column* is not because they evolved last but because the birds were the last ones to drown in the flood. When they do drown, they float because they have hollow feathers and hollow bones.

The *geologic column*, the order of the index fossils, has some order to the layers in some places, but there are many places where it's totally out of order. The only reason there is any semblance of order to the so called *geologic column* is due to *hydrologic sorting*. Floods automatically sort materials based on density. All of those layers were formed rapidly in one year as the flood took place. There is no other way to explain it. Some of the animals were trapped in the mud right away. Those living at the bottom already, like the clams, and seashells, were buried first. The mud slides were everywhere. Huge beds of them were buried. Those living at higher elevations were buried last, and some of the animals were not buried at all instead they floated around. As they floated, they rotted. As they rotted, they began to fall apart. A head fell off, a tail fell off, a leg fell off, and pretty soon there would be a swirling mass of rotting carcasses of pieces of animals mixed together, as the eddies went all over the place. When they finally were buried and the flood waters receded, there would be a tangled up messes of bones like the dinosaur graveyards that are found all over the world. The picture in figure 5-12 is of a man chiseling out the backbone of an animal that has no legs, head, tail, rib cage attached to it, or teeth marks

on the bone. It wasn't torn apart by scavengers. That dinosaur rotted apart in the flood. Right next to it is another back bone bent backwards. Obviously, a flood killed those critters.

If the biblical account of the flood is correct, you would expect to find dinosaur bones and other animal bones, tangled up in giant fossil graveyards, which is the case found all over the world. Fossil graveyards are often two or three miles thick of solid dinosaur bones or other types of bones. Dinosaur bones have been excavated by the tons in the fossil graveyards of Vernal, Utah (figure 5-13). These are different dinosaur bones tangled on top of each other. A flood of global proportion is the only logical explanation.

There are so many hippopotamus bones in places like Sicily (figure 5-14) that they dig them out with bulldozers and use them to make charcoal. Don't try to tell me that all the hippos decided to go to Sicily to die for millions of years. I think that there had to be a flood that buried them all there.

The Bible says in Genesis 8:1, ***And God remembered Noah, (its a good thing by the way) and every living thing, and all the cattle that was with him in the ark: and God made a wind to pass over the earth, and the waters asswaged.*** Asswaged? I was in a debate and one of the professors in the audience said, Mr. Hovind, is it possible for it to rain so much that it would flood the entire earth? I said, Oh, no sir. It could not do it. Not today. There is only enough moisture in the air for it to rain, probably, two inches. This would not flood the whole world. There was a set of circumstances that caused the world to flood in Noah's time. Oceans were not as deep. There were no mountains. An abundance of water was trapped in the atmosphere, plus extra terrestrial water; i.e., ice meteors. On top of that there was subterranean water that erupted. So, yes the world was flooded. He said, If the world was completely flooded, where did all of the water go? I said, That's a good question. He said, Did it dry up? Did it soak into the ground? What happened to the water? I said, No, it didn't dry up. Some soaked into the ground, but very little compared to the volume of water. Genesis 8:1 says that the waters asswaged. The word asswaged means to sink down. The waters actually sank down. Psalms 104:5 tells more about that, ***Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever. Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a garment.*** The deep is referencing the oceans. The earth was covered with the deep as with a garment. The earth was completely wrapped up in water. Verse six says, ***The waters stood above the mountains.*** Some people say that the Bible account is referring to a local flood. No, it is not a local flood when the water goes above the mountains and starts to go down the other side. Plus, if it were a local flood, why did God tell Noah to build a boat? Why didn't he just say, Noah, you need to move, son. It's going to rain. He could have moved just about anywhere in the world in 120 years. I don't see how anybody could believe that. No, it was a world-wide flood. Verse number seven states: ***At thy rebuke they fled.*** They refers to the water. At God's rebuke, the waters fled. If the world was covered and surrounded by water and water takes its own level, where could the water go? How could it flee? That's a good question. Continuing with verse seven, ***At thy rebuke they fled; at the voice of thy thunder they hasted away.*** The water went roaring away. You ask, Where? Verse eight says, ***They go up***



***by the mountains; they go down by the valleys...*** This is an Old English phrase. We would not say it like that today. We would say, The mountains ascend; they valleys descend.

Noah was in the ark, along with the animals, the world was completely covered with water, and all of a sudden the mountains began to lift up, and the oceans began to sink down. The earths crust was cracking up, tilting and shifting. The mountains ascend, the valleys descend. The earths crust is pretty thin (figure 5-15). You may say, It feels pretty solid. Thats because you dont weigh enough to shake it. Its actually pretty thin. The earths crust as compared to the size of the earth is thinner than the skin of an apple compared to the apple. The earths crust is about three miles thick under the ocean. The earths crust is about thirty miles thick under the continents. Note that it is much thicker under the continents. That has been known for some time. I believe spots where the oceans are today sank down, and the water ran into the hole. The mountains lifted up. Remember the oceans crust is much thinner than the continents crust.

Here is an analogy. If your house were filled with three feet of water, and you were to lift one end of the house, the water would run to the opposite end, carrying with it all of the chairs, furniture, books and whatever else was in the water. The faster the building is lifted, the faster the waters run away. If it is lifted slowly, the water runs away slowly. How fast the mountains lifted up determines how fast the waters ran off. How fast the water ran off would determine how deep the canyons were carved. It would be no problem to carve out the Grand Canyon due to the soft sediment. The mountains arose and the valleys descended after the flood. People often say, There isnt enough water to cover Mt. Everest. The simple answer is that Mt. Everest didnt exist until after the flood. The mountains arose after the flood as proclaimed in Psalms 104. By the way, the mountain ranges on the earth follow the coast lines (figure 5-16). Have you ever looked at a globe and noticed that the Rocky Mountains follow the Pacific coast; the Andes Mountains follow the South Pacific; the Appalachian Mountains follow the North Atlantic; and the Alps follow the Mediterranean? All of the mountain ranges follow the coast lines as if thats the way they broke into place, tilted and shifted, making the water run off and the mountains lift up.

There are fault lines around the world. There is no question that Los Angeles is moving northward. That does not prove that it has been happening for millions of years. That might be left over movement from the flood 4,400 years ago. Its still shifting and moving a little bit. It is also noteworthy that there are rock layers (figures 5-17 and 5-18) found all over the world in bent, twisted, and contorted positions. Have you noticed that rocks dont bend very easily? Layers that are bent and twisted as these were bent while they were soft. After a year-long flood there would be thousands upon thousands of layers of soft mud at the bottom. As the mountains arose some of the layers were twisted, and bend. When they finally hardened over the next few weeks, months or years, they would be stuck in a twisted position. Water ran off leaving behind fossils like the seastars shown in (figure 5-19). Obviously, moving water conditions left them behind. Notice that their legs are all going the same direction. The flood did that.

The top of Mt. Everest is very interesting. Edmund Hillary climbed Mt. Everest in 1953. When he got to the 26,000 foot level, he stuck his pick into

the ground to pull himself up when he noticed sea shells. From 26,000 feet all the way to the top at 29,028 feet, the entire top of that mountain is sedimentary rock packed full of seashells. Another interesting thing to note is the seashells were found petrified in a closed position. Now, wait a minute! When a clam dies he opens. Go to the beach and look for seashells. You would be fortunate to find a matched pair. When they die they open, and then, the remains don't last long. Petrified clams can be found in the closed position by the billions on top Mt. Everest.

As I was speaking in Mentone, Alabama, a man asked, Brother Hovind, do you need some more petrified clams for your display tables? I said, Yes, why? He said, They're four feet thick in my backyard. When I dig down a short distance, I encounter petrified clams. There are millions of them. There are enough petrified clams in the closed position to build a ten-lane highway from New York to San Francisco. Clams in the closed position are one of the most common fossils in the world. Do you know what that shows to me? That shows me that they were buried alive, and when they woke up dead, they couldn't even open. They are found like that all over the world. It is evidence of the judgment of God. When the judgment of God came, it was too late. It was all over. Mt. Everest is full of petrified seashells at the top? How do you explain that? The evolutionists say, That's no problem. That area uplifted over several hundred-million years. No, I believe that it uplifted very quickly. Psalms 104 tells about the mountains lifting up, and the valleys sinking down after the flood.

This is going to sound strange, but I believe that the oceans were smaller after the flood. You say, Dr. Hovind, run that by me again. When the world was covered with water, thin spots sank down, mountains lifted up, and water ran into the holes, making the oceans smaller after the flood? Yes, if the oceans were smaller, then the continents would be larger. If the continents were larger, they would all be connected. The oceans have two distinctive parts: (1). The abyss is one part, which is the deep regions of the oceans. The abyss averages about 13,000 to 15,000 feet deep. Many people ask if there is enough water in the ocean to cover the earth. There is enough water in the ocean right now to cover the earth 12,000 feet deep everywhere -- if the earth were smooth. It would be two miles deep everywhere. There is plenty of water in the ocean to drown everybody. (2). The other part of the ocean is the continental shelf. If you walk into the ocean, it is rather shallow. Sometimes you can go out for hundreds of miles before it reaches even 500 to 1,000 feet deep. All of a sudden at about 1,000 feet deep, it drops off to 15,000 feet deep. It looks as if the shelf was once the beach. I believe that it was. There are numerous erosion marks at the continental rise where it changes from the abyss to the continental shelf. There are also numerous underwater canyons. You may wonder where is all this extra water. Remember, there are still two giant ice caps. There is a massive amount of water trapped at the North and South Poles in the form of ice caps that reach as far south as what is now Kansas City. If the oceans were smaller, the continents would be bigger, and one could walk anyplace in the world. For the first, one-hundred or so years after the flood, people could walk anyplace in the world. All of the continents were connected because the oceans were lower. England was not an island, but rather part

of the mainland. The English channel was just a valley that later filled in with water.

The map shown in figure 5-22 illustrates the river planes of the Mississippi drainage area. I believe that the Gulf of Mexico must have sunk in slowly, and all the Mississippi drainage area drained off slowly leaving behind nice big flat planes like Kansas, Nebraska, Illinois, and Iowa. Other places like the Rocky Mountains must have lifted up faster causing the water to run off faster leaving behind more rugged terrain such as the Grand Canyon. If you ever fly over Utah and Nevada area, you will see that it looks as if somebody left the hose running before the grass started growing. Its a mess. I believe that it all happened rapidly as the flood waters ran off. It all depends on how fast the mountains lifted up. The reason the Appalachian Mountains are more rounded is not because they are older, but because they lifted up slower. The Rocky Mountains are more rugged not because they are younger, but because they lifted up faster, causing them to break up more.

Water was trapped in huge sections of the earth, and later broke through and formed the canyons (figure 5-23). One textbook states, *Over millions of years the Colorado River formed the Grand Canyon from solid rock*. Now, hold on just a second! This is based on several faulty assumptions. Those rock layers that the Grand Canyon run through are obviously sedimentary rock. Sedimentary rock is formed from layers of mud that turned into rock. If those layers are really millions of years different in age, as they state in textbooks, wouldnt you suppose if one layer was exposed for a couple of million years there would be canyons cut into that layer before the next one was put on top? Why dont we see any canyons in between the layers? Why are all the layers nice and neatly stacked on top of each other? There ought to be erosion marks in between those layers, and there arent any. If that layer was exposed for millions of years, dont you believe that maybe some meteors would fall on it? We find meteors all over the world, and yet no one has ever found a fossilized meteorite. No one has ever found a meteor in any layer except the top layer of the earth. Those layers were not exposed for millions of years, and the Colorado River did not make the Grand Canyon. The Colorado River just happens to flow through the crack. The flood made the Grand Canyon in a couple of hours. A lot of water moving through soft mud can make a Grand Canyon in a couple hours with no problem. As the Rocky Mountains lifted up, and the water ran off through the soft mud, it washed out in a hurry.

The same thing happened fifteen years ago with Mount Saint Helens (figure 5-24). You may remember when Mount Saint Helens erupted. My sister lived sixty miles north of there in Puyallup, Washington. She got ash all over her yard from the Mount Saint Helens eruption. When the mountain erupted on May 18, 1980, about 8:00 in the morning, it was reported to blow up straight out of the top (Figure 5-25). It was equivalent to an atomic bomb going off ever second for nine hours straight. That is the equivalent of nearly 30,000 atomic bombs going off in that mountain. It started to blow off the top, and immediately the north slope collapsed and slid down the hill. The volcano then began to blow out toward the north. As the ash, water, and steam came out of the volcano, it melted all of the glaciers on the mountain (figure 5-26). It produced a scalding hot mud slide that slid down

the valley. The scalding hot mud went racing down the valley ripping down everything in its path (figure 5-27). The mud slid all the way down and blocked off the Toutle River to the point that it completely stopped the river from flowing.

Maybe as a child you went out and dammed up a creek to make yourself a fishing hole or a swimming hole. What happens when you stop up a creek? The creek becomes deeper and deeper behind the dam, and pretty soon the water goes over the top. The dam then washes out, especially if you are building it out of soft mud. Once it starts over the top, the dam doesn't last. The Toutle River was stopped for five days as the mud flowed across (figure 5-28). Five days later the water got deep enough that the water began to go over the top of the mud slide. Once it started washing over the top, it started washing out canyons in a hurry (figure 5-29). It washed out a canyon 140 feet deep, 1,000 feet wide, and 2,000 feet long in fifteen minutes. A miniature Grand Canyon 140 feet deep in fifteen minutes? It is no problem if you have a lot of water backed up behind soft mud. When the mud is flowing, it automatically separates into different densities. When the canyon washed out and then dried, scientists went down into that brand new canyon that was just formed a few days earlier. They noticed that the sides of the canyons were arranged in nice neat layers (figure 5-30). It looks just like the Grand Canyon, and they were scratching their heads and saying, Wait a minute! We thought it took millions of years for layers to form like this. It can be done in fifteen minutes? The world wide-flood formed almost all the canyon features of the world. In the past 4,400 years, some have been formed, but no, it didn't take millions of years.

The textbooks state that it is rather puzzling about the Grand Canyon. The Colorado River loops back and forth through the Grand Canyon. A slow moving low gradient river like the Mississippi River has lots of loops and meanders in it. A fast moving, high gradient stream is relatively straight, and has steep sides, but the Grand Canyon is both looping and steep sided (figure 5-31). Therefore, the textbooks state that it is a puzzle about the Grand Canyon. How were they formed? Is it young or is it old? Was it slow moving or fast moving?

They have it all wrong. The Colorado River didn't even make that canyon. The flood made the Grand Canyon. The Colorado River just happens to flow in the crack left behind. That's all!

When Mount Saint Helens erupted, it blew thousands and thousands of trees for 150 square miles down into Spirit Lake, and some are still floating there today (figure 5-32). They were flattened like toothpicks. I flew over that area four years after the eruption had occurred, and it was unbelievable the amount of devastation that took place. Trees were down everywhere. These were not small trees; many were six to eight feet in diameter. With all of their branches stripped off, they looked like toothpicks.

The trees floating in Spirit Lake were very interesting. The log mat that was floating in the lake displaced three square miles. There were thousands upon thousands of trees floating around. Within a few days, some of the trees began to become waterlogged. The trees were wrenched out the ground so forcefully that the internal parts of the trees were exposed, allowing them to absorb water. Within a few days, weeks, and months, many of them were completely soaked. Instead of floating in the prone

position, some of the trees began to float in the upright position with just the tips sticking up above the water (figure 5-33). As they soaked full of water, the trees began to sink to the bottom and stick in the mud at the bottom of Spirit Lake. As the trees stuck in the mud just barely floating, more layers of mud settled in around them. Every time there was another little volcanic eruption, minor activity, or just a storm, more dirt, ash, and debris, washed off the already eroded hillside. Seasonal changes caused leaves to accumulate, and the trees rolling around and knocking against each other caused the bark to fall off and settle to the bottom. Layer after layer after layer of dirt, ash, mud, bark, and all types of sediment settled at the bottom of Spirit Lake. Thousands of those trees are buried at the bottom today. The log mat only displaces two square miles today. One square mile of trees have sunk to the bottom. It is estimated that over 20,000 trees are stuck in the bottom of the lake. Scuba divers have gone under the log mat, and guess what? Most of the trees are stuck in a standing position. Some of them are already fifteen feet deep in mud. This only happened fifteen years ago. Do you know what is going to happen to those trees? They are going to petrify, and they will petrify in a standing position running through all the different layers. This is the same condition that was discussed in chapter four about the petrified trees standing upright through many layers of strata. They will petrify in the same manner as was shown in figures 4-4 and 4-5.

Some ask me, Brother Hovind, doesn't it take millions of years for wood to petrify? No, it can happen fairly quickly. It can be accomplished in a laboratory in about two years. If you bury a block of wood in mud with plenty of minerals, and put it under pressure, it will petrify in two years. I was speaking in Union City, Tennessee, when a man came to me and said, Brother Hovind, how long does it take wood to petrify? I said, Well, it can be done in the laboratory in two years. He said, The strangest thing happened at our shop. I work in a shop where we make wood pallets. About twenty five years ago we had a bad storm, and the hillside slid down and covered up a bunch of our pallets in mud. The boss told us not to bother with digging them out, but rather we would just make new ones. Last week, we were digging across that area to put in a sewer line, and hit some of those pallets. They had been in the ground for only twenty five years, and they had petrified. These pallets had turned to stone. He went on to say, I couldn't believe it. Petrified in just twenty five years!

I was in Iowa preaching where some farmers told me that when they were kids they had buried a bunch of fence posts. The posts began to rot off and the grandkids tried to pull the fence posts up to put new ones in. The tops were rotted, but the bottoms were petrified. This took place in just thirty years in Iowa soil.

In the summer of 1993, I was preaching at a camp in St. Clair, Missouri. An old-timer came to me and asked, Brother Hovind, how long does it take wood to petrify? I said, Brother, not too long under good conditions. He said, I have a spring on my property called Blue Mud, because the mud looks kind of blue there. This spring bubbles up out of the ground with a blue-colored mud all around it. When I was a youngster, there was an old man that would come over all the time and bury hard rock maple blocks in my blue mud spring. He would carve or cut them into the shape of blocks and

bury them in the mud. When he returned in two or three years and removed them, he had hone stones to sharpen his knife. They would petrify in two or three years in the blue mud of St. Clair, Missouri. Almost all of the petrified wood in the world was formed due to the flood. The same thing is true for fossils of other types. They fossilized very rapidly. As the mountains lifted up, the pressure would increase and convert some of the sedimentary layers to metamorphic rocks. They were changed due to the pressure and heat.

If you visit Yellowstone National Park, you can see petrified trees standing up (figure 5-34). There are twenty-seven different layers represented by these trees. Some of the trees from the bottom layers extend up through the next few layers. The guides will try to tell you that this proves that there were twenty-seven consecutive forests. No, no! If there were twenty-seven consecutive forests petrified over millions of years, why is it that none of the trees are over 500 years old? I believe that all of those trees were ripped out by the flood. The twenty-seven different layers were deposited on top of them, and some of the trees run through layers up above them. Another interesting point is, these trees were petrified in a standing position. What is going to happen when the dirt washes away from around them, and the trees fall? They are going to break or shatter. Have you ever cut firewood? When you cut the tree down, it does not automatically break up into logs for you. Have you ever noticed that phenomenon before? You have to saw it up into logs. The petrified forests in Calistoga, California, Flora Mississippi, or in Arizona, have petrified logs that are broken up (figure 5-35). It looks as if the trees fell over after they were already petrified.

Genesis 8:3a says, ***And the waters returned from off the earth continually...*** Many of the modern translations have really messed up that verse. They should have left it alone. They tried to make it more understandable. Some of the translations state, The water kept decreasing off the earth. That is not what happened. The Hebrew phrase, Halak-vashub means the water was going and returning. When they tried to make it more readable, they totally lost the meaning of this passage. The water was not steadily decreasing, rather it was going and returning. Think back to the analogy where we filled your house full of water. If your house was three feet deep in water, and one side was picked up, all the water would rush to one end. Is it going to stay there? No, its going to slosh back up, and then come down, and then back up again. The water is going to be going and returning as it gradually loses its energy. If the mountains lifted up and the valleys sank down and became the oceans, the water would rush into the hole, and then tidal waves would rush back and forth across the ocean, causing secondary erosion. As Noah was calmly sitting in the ark, the tidal waves would race back and forth, and all of a sudden he hit bottom. He looked out and saw that all of the water was rushing away from him. He said, Yea, Lord! The flood is over! Can I get out? The Lord said, No Noah, stay right there son. The water is coming back. A few days later, maybe it was a week, the water came back and moved the ark four or five miles. By then, Noah had apparently cut off the anchor stones, those big 9,000 pound rocks hanging over the side for ballast. The anchor stones were found four or five miles away from the boat, if Ron Wyatts discovery is Noahs ark.

The rock layers were bent and lifted up as shown in figure 5-36. After this, secondary erosion wiped the layer smooth and new layers were

deposited on top, as shown in figure 5-37. That is why we find strange rock layers like Garden of the Gods in Colorado Springs. Rock layers are found standing up. That is why there are dinosaur foot prints found at forty-five degree angles in the Red Rock Amphitheater outside Denver, Colorado. Dinosaur footprints are all over that place. Did dinosaurs walk on hillsides at a forty-five degree angle? No, the land was all flat. They laid their prints down, and then the ground was lifted up afterwards -- the mountains arose.

The textbooks state that it took billions of years to form the Grand Canyon. That is just not true. It was formed rapidly. Features such as those shown in figure 5-38, formed in ten minutes. A miniature version of that can be made in ten minutes out in your yard with a pile of dirt and a water hose. You could wash it away and leave features like that with John Wayne riding around or something like that. The tour guides will tell you that it took millions of years to form the Grand Canyon and the Bad Lands. How do you know that sir? He will say, Well, we only get about twelve inches of rain out here every year. You can tell by the hardness of the rock, and the amount of rain we get that it would take millions of years to make these Bad Lands. Well now sir, you are assuming that the rock hardness has always been the same. What if it was all soft mud, and there was 500 feet of water running through there? The Bad Lands could be formed in about fifteen minutes, couldn't it? Was it a little bit of water over lots of time, or was it lots of water over a little time? There is a big difference. Those places formed rapidly.

As I stated earlier, I believe that all of the continents were connected after the flood. People could walk anyplace in the world. If the ocean was lowered, you could walk anyplace in the world. For the first one-hundred years, the oceans were smaller, the continents were bigger, and the ice caps were huge, trapping lots of water. In the first one-hundred years of history after the flood, the Tower of Babel incident took place, and God confused the languages. The people spread out across the world could walk anywhere they wanted to go. As the water level rose because of the icecaps melting, they became trapped in certain regions. The people then developed peculiar traits. The Australian Aborigines have a small cap muscle; the Indians have higher cheek bones; and the Norwegians have blond hair. They all developed these peculiar traits as small inbreeding groups were trapped in localized areas after the flood.

The Bible says in Genesis 10:25, ***And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for in his days was the earth divided...*** The earth was divided in the days of Peleg? Peleg was born one-hundred years after the flood. If you look at the longevity chart in chapter 1 (figure 1-6), you will notice that Noah begat Shem. Shem begat Arphaxad. Arphaxad begat Salah. Salah begat Eber, and Eber begat Peleg. Peleg was born one-hundred years after the flood. I think that it took one-hundred years for those icecaps to melt. It would take a long time for a big block of ice to melt. As the ice melted back from Kansas City, it left behind Drumlins, Terminal Moraines, and glaciers. This would take a long time. The bigger the block of ice, the longer that it takes to melt. Icebergs float around sometimes for five years before they melt in the ocean. Ice that reached all the way to Kansas City would take one-hundred years to melt back to Alaska. As it melted, it slowly raised the ocean level. That explains

to me why we find underwater flat-top mountains called guyots. The mountains come up, and they are cut off flat 1,000 feet under water. This also explains why there is a continental shelf. At one time there was a beach way out there at the edge of the continental shelf. This also explains why there are so many legends of lost cities like Atlantis and Poseidon. I imagine that within the first few hundred years, cities were built close to the beach much as they do in Pensacola where I live. As the water kept coming up further and further, the cities had to be abandoned. Maybe this explains why there are some unusual features under water. In Bermuda, they have found large cut stones on the ocean floor as if someone was constructing a building thirty feet under water. What appears to be a four-lane highway running off the Yucatan Peninsula has been found under the Gulf of Mexico. Who would build a highway under the Gulf of Mexico? Maybe it wasn't under the Gulf of Mexico, **...for in his days was the earth divided...**

The purpose of this chapter is to give you an alternative to what you have been taught in school. The Bible warns us in I Timothy chapter 6 to be careful about what is so-called science. Evolution is not science! It has nothing to do with science. It should not be in the science textbooks. Statements like billion of years ago... is not scientifically provable and should not be in the textbooks. No one can prove that the world is billions of years old, but if you pick up any earth science textbook, it will tell you that the earth is billions of years old. That theme is all through the public school textbooks.

You should consider becoming a member of the textbook selection committee and vote against this unscientific data in our textbooks. If you need help, get Mel Gablers book, *What Are They Teaching Our Children?* Mel Gabler and his crew research the public school textbooks. They read and write a critique on each of them. If you want to help your county get good textbooks, contact the Gablers in Longview, Texas. They have already read every book and can tell you which ones are the best.

The Bible warns us in Colossians 2:8, to be careful to not be spoiled by philosophy. It states, **Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.** Evolution is a pagan philosophy that spoils us.

I will close with this picture (figure 5-39). It is a picture of a fish swallowing another fish; either that or the little one is a dentist. I can't tell for sure; anyway, it's a fossil now of one fish half way down the throat of another fish. You know, neither one of those fish thought that they were going to die that day, did they? They were swimming along minding their business. The big one was eating the little one for lunch or supper, and the flood took place. Mud slides went everywhere; they were buried in the mud and then they both woke up dead. Hey, do you know that you are going to wake up dead someday? Now, think about this. Do you know that you are going to be dead longer than you are going to be alive? Think about that one! That means that you really ought to plan for when you are dead more than you plan for when you are alive because you are going to be there longer. Someday, you are going to be in a position for some people to stare at you from the top, while saying, I wonder what he was thinking when he died? When you are dead, and it will happen to you, (it's going to happen to



me; I fully intend to die, but I want to make it the last thing that I ever do), what are you going to have to show for your life? When you get to heaven are you going to say, Hey Lord, you should see what I left behind. He is going to say, Yeah, I saw all of it. Will you say, Lord, I left behind a fancy car. He will say, Yep, you sure did, son. Maybe it will be, Lord, I had millions in the bank. He will say, Yep, you sure did. Look who has it now. What do you have now?

The Bible says that we are supposed to lay up treasures in heaven where moth and rust do not corrupt; where thieves do not break through and steal. How big is your mansion in heaven? What have you been sending ahead? What has God got to work with? We are going to lose everything down here because heaven and earth shall pass away. We need to lay up treasures in heaven.

There is a war going on, and you can become involved. You can send things ahead right now. You could win souls to Christ. If you cant get you a big one, get you a little one. Find somebody that will listen to you. Somebody will listen to you. Bring somebody to church with you this Sunday. Get involved!

## **Chapter 6**

### *Questions and Answers*

This chapter is a collection of the most commonly asked questions people have asked during my various seminars held throughout the country.. All questions are fair game, and I am asked all sorts of questions. The general theme is the creation theme, evolution, and dinosaurs. I wish to re-emphasize that I believe the Bible is the infallible, inspired, inerrant Word of the living God. I taught high school science for fifteen years, and I can assure you that there are no conflicts with the Bible. It is Gods Word.

#### ***Question.***

*Does the Bible have contradictions?*

I became a Christian at the age of sixteen. I was raised in a Lutheran Church, a Mennonite Church, and a Methodist Church; we also visited the Catholic Church and just about every other kind that there was. By the time I was sixteen, I had been baptized, catechized, pasteurized, and homogenized, but I had not been converted. I was saved when I was sixteen and started attending a little right-wing, radical, independent, temperamental, fundamental Baptist church. My life really began to change. My parents became a little concerned and said, Kent, we are glad for all these changes in your life, but we would like to tone you down just a little bit. Would you go to the Methodist church camp this summer? I said, Id be glad to. I had only been saved for a couple of months when I went to the Methodist church camp. Now, there are some good and wonderful

Methodists out there, please dont misunderstand me, but this particular group was extremely liberal. The preacher at this Methodist church did not believe that the Bible is the Word of God by a long shot. He did not believe in a literal hell. He did not even believe in a literal devil.

The first evening at the camp the counselor set all the guys on their bunks, and he said, Let me find out about all of you. We told him who we were. He said, I want you to know that I am a student at Illinois State University, and I am a humanist. I am going to be your counselor this week. I did not even know what being a humanist meant. I was only sixteen, and the brain doesnt even start developing until about twenty. I asked him, What is a humanist? Does that mean that you believe in humans? He said, Yes, I believe in humans, but that is not what humanist means. I said, Do you believe the Bible? He said, Oh, no, no. The Bible is a good book, but its not perfect. There are conflicts in the Bible. Now remember, I had only been saved a couple of months. My preacher had told me, If someone ever tells you there are contradictions in the Bible, hand them your Bible and tell them to show you one. I thought, Ill try it. I handed him my Bible, and I said, Show me one of those contradictions, would you please? He said, I would be glad to. I thought, Oh, no! He took my Bible and opened it to Genesis chapter 1. Let me show you what he showed me in 1969, the first summer that I was a Christian. He turned to Genesis 1:11-13, ***And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the third day.*** The counselor read these verses, and then said, Kent, what day did God make the trees? I said, He made them on the third day. Thats what it says. He said, That is correct. Look down in verse twenty. This is where we start day five. Verse twenty states, ***And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven.*** He said, Kent, what day did God make the birds? I said, He made them on the fifth day. He said, What did he make the birds out of? He made Adam out of the dirt. He made Eve out of Adams rib. What did he make the birds out of? I said, He made the birds out of the water. He said, That is correct. Now look over to Genesis 1:24-26. He began to read, ***And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let us make man in our image...*** The counselor then said, Hold it Kent, just a minute. What day did God make the animals? I said, He made the animals on day six according to verse twenty-four. The counselor said, Did he make the man after he made the animals? I said, Yes, he did. He made man last. The counselor said good. Now that we have settled all of that. Let me show you a contradiction in the Bible. Look at Genesis 2:8-9. He read, ***And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. And out of***

***the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food...*** Wait a minute, the counselor said; I thought the trees came on day three, and man came on day six. Chapter two has a different story. It has man first, and then the trees, an obvious contradiction! I didnt have any idea what to say. I said, Well, I dont know what the answer is to that one. He said, Oh, there is much more. Look down in Genesis 2:18-19. He began to read, ***And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. And out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air...*** He said, Here, we have two problems. We have the animals being made after man, whereas chapter one has the animals being made before man. The second problem is we have here the birds are being made out of the ground. Chapter 1 has them being made out of the water. He went on to say, Kent, the Bible is a nice book, but it is not the Word of God. I was devastated. I didnt know what to say.

Have you ever been really defeated in an argument, and you just walk away saying, Well, I dont know what to say. You just feel humiliated. I wish that I could find that counselor. I hope he reads this book, because I have the solution to his problem.

Let me tell you the Hovind Theory of what happened. On the third day God made the trees, the plants, vegetation, etc. The fourth day he made the Sun. On the fifth day he made the birds out of the water. On the sixth day he made the animals, and then he made man. He then put man in the garden in a particular place. The Bible says that it was eastward, a particular place, not the whole world, just one spot. He put man in the garden, and there he made the trees to grow. The rest of the world is already full of trees. He made the trees to grow, and it was only certain trees. It was only the trees that were pleasant to the sight and good to eat. It wasnt all the trees in the world. This is a continuation of the creation. God is not done yet. God is still creating. It is still day six. When God finished making all the trees, he looked at Adam, and said, Adam, it is not good for you to be alone. I am going to make a help that is meet, or suitable for you. Out of the ground, God made one of each of the animals on the earth. The rest of the world is already full of animals. This is just taking place in the garden, and it is just for the purpose for Adam to name the animals, and to select a wife. God didnt make all the animals after Adam. He only made one of each of the animals. As Adam was standing there, up out of the ground came one of the animals. Adam said, Hippopotamus. No thanks, not my type. Then up came a giraffe. Adam said, No thanks. One by one, God made one of each of the animals, and Adam named them, and rejected them as far as being his wife. The Lord said, Adam, what do you think of all these animals? Adam said, That was great, Lord, but I dont want to marry any of them. The Lord said, Okay Adam, you just go to sleep. I have a surprise for you. Adam went to sleep and the Lord took one small spare part and made the worlds first loud speaker. After several days the Lord came back. They had their wedding and honeymoon. I dont know who threw the rice. The Lord said, Adam, how is going? Adam said, Lord, I have a couple of questions. The Lord said, Sure Adam, what would you like to know? Adam said, First of all, why did you make Eve so beautiful? The Lord said, Adam, I did that on purpose so that you would be attracted to her. He

said, Lord, it is working very well. I am very attracted to her, but Lord, I have another question. Why did you make her to be such an air head? The Lord said, Well, Adam I had to do that so that she would be attracted to you. It works both ways.

No, there are no conflicts between Genesis chapters 1 and 2. Dont buy that garbage. That is the excuse a lot of people always use.

### ***Question.***

#### *What are the lines on products for?*

I want you to look at something interesting on a different subject. This question comes up frequently, What are those little lines on the products for? It is not an Ethiopian family portrait. Those little lines have a meaning. Computers are not very bright. Computers can only count to one. They go from zero to one, and then they have to start over again. They speak a language called binary language. Everything has to be described to a computer in binary, which is a series of zeros and ones. If you want to make the number five, there are two different ways to do it. You can make it with a zero, which is a white line; a one, which is a black line; and another one, which is a black line, and then zero, zero, zero, and then one. The computer reads all of that and interprets it as a five. When the binary language was developed for computers, somebody decided to let the white stripes represent zeros and the black stripes represent ones. By using a laser, computers scan the bar code and translate them into numbers. In 1972, the bar code was introduced on the products. It was known as the universal product code, or the universal price code (UPC). As I said before, there are primarily two different ways to make each of the numbers, with three different ways to make a few of them. If you will notice the first two lines of the computer bar code on the left are longer than the rest of them, and they are unmarked. The next two lines are longer and they are marked out in front and to the left. It is the number zero in this case. A fat line and a skinny line make up the number zero. Look at the bar code in figure 6-1 and you will see the fat line and skinny line says zero, but it is written out to the left. You will notice that they did not mark the number for the first two. Look five more numbers over to the right, and in the center there are two skinny lines that are unmarked. They are the same as the first two. Look five more numbers to the right, and you will see four more numbers that are longer than the rest. In this case, there are two fat lines, which represent the number two, written out to the far right, and two skinny lines again that are unmarked. Two skinny lines represent the computer code for six. Back in 1972, the binary code began to be implemented. Every UPC code starts with a six, with a six in the middle, and a six at the end. They have always been that way.

Nobody seems to know why six was chosen. They just had to pick some number. The first six triggers the computer to turn on, read the first set, the middle six tells the computer to switch to set two, and the last six defines the end of the set. This is a unique way to make numbers, and enables companies to keep a good inventory of their products. It is an amazing

system which works great, but it ought to ring a few bells if you are a Christian.

The Bible states that in the last days there is going to come a system of marks to buy or sell money. Revelation 13:16-18 states, ***And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.*** I don't understand that, but there might be three different things going on simultaneously. Maybe there are some for the elite, and some for the peons. Continuing with verse eighteen, ***Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.*** A score equals twenty; so, three score equals sixty. We were warned two thousand years ago that in the end times there would be a system of marks to buy and sell, and it is going to have the number 666. The Bible states in chapter 14, if you receive that mark you will be tormented.

### ***Mark of the Beast***

#### ***Question.***

*What is the tiny strip in paper money?*

You might want to be up-to-date on the events happening that relate to the mark of the beast. The UPC code that was developed in 1972 is on nearly all products, but a system was needed to keep track of the cash. The US Treasury began marking the bills in 1989 with a magnetic strip of paper. It is a magnetic tape through the center of the paper located on the left end of the bills. If you have a denomination five or above, and it was printed in 1989 or later, it will have that strip. You can hold it up to the light and see it very clearly. That little magnetic strip is of the same type that is on the back of your credit card. If you rub the strip a few times, and then grab it with a pair of tweezers, you can remove that little strip out of the money. Written across the strip in a twenty dollar bill is "20 USA." The amount changes for each of the different denominations. The excuse that is given for this change, of course, is to prevent counterfeiting.

The long range plan may surprise you. They want to be able to track the money and find out where it goes. They want to know who had it last. The only way they can do that is to have a computer chip implanted in your hand, so when you handle the money, it will register who had that money. They would also be able to track how much money you have in your pocket by these little magnetic strips. I listened to a tape by a computer programmer from Washington state. He designed a very tiny computer chip. He was given the assignment with taxpayer dollars to develop a micro computer chip that could be injected into people that were paralyzed. The idea was to put a chip into each of the major muscles and network them together so that a paralyzed person would be able to get some movement from their muscles. They were trying to recreate the nervous system with computers. He and his crew developed a computer chip that could be ejected through a

hypodermic needle. They debated back and forth about where to get the power source. The question was, How are we going to power this computer? They wanted a computer chip that was small enough to go through a hypodermic needle, and would be equipped with a lifetime battery. They decided to use the lithium battery, over many objections, because the lithium battery can be recharged by changes in the body's temperature. As the body becomes warmer or cooler, it could automatically recharge this battery. They spent nearly two million dollars to find out what part of the body changes temperature the most during its lifetime. After spending two million dollars, they found out what any mother could have told them in the beginning. It is the forehead or the hand. Where do you feel for a fever? I cannot verify this, but I understand from a very reliable source (that I would rather not name) that some of the Desert Storm troops were injected with this little computer chip in their hand. Whether that is far fetched or not I do not know. The testimony that he gave me was that they were testing the system to see if they could track the Desert Storm troops via satellite based on that chip in their hand.

If the lithium battery that they are using and did use, goes bad, and there are several things that will make it go bad, it will cause a horrible boil and sore on the body. The Bible tells in Revelation about everybody getting noisome and grievous sores on their bodies in the last days. We are to the point where people do not realize that a computer chip can be injected into the body, and one can be permanently and invisibly marked. There will come a day that you will go to the store to buy groceries; you will lay your hand on a scanner (Thank you Mrs. Jones), and your money will automatically be deducted from your account. There will be no cash, no credit cards, no checks, and no privacy. Whoever runs that computer will know everything about you; they will know everything that you have bought and every place that you have ever been. They will control the cash and that is the real purpose behind it all. This little strip in the money is just one of many stages of technology development. Most people are fascinated when they realize that we are very close to the fulfillment of this prophecy in the book of Revelation. There is going to be a system where you cannot buy or sell without the mark in the hands or in the forehead. This is something that you need to think about.

## ***Carbon Dating***

### ***Question.***

*Can you prove the age of something with carbon dating?*

Another subject that needs to be discussed is carbon dating. Many people ask me, What about carbon dating? Doesn't carbon dating, potassium argon dating, or uranium lead dating, prove that things are millions of years old? You were probably taught when you went to school that they prove the age of things by using carbon dating methods.

Let me explain how carbon dating works. In the atmosphere there is a little carbon (CO<sub>2</sub>) in the air that we breathe. There is not much of it, but we breathe in a little of it in, and your body hardly does anything with it.

Generally, you create it and then breathe it back out. Plants, on the other hand, take in CO<sub>2</sub>, and it becomes part of their tissue. They make sugars and things out of the CO<sub>2</sub>. When cosmic radiation from outer space hits the atmosphere, the high energy particles change the nitrogen (our air is about 80% nitrogen) to carbon fourteen (C14), and it becomes radioactive. That doesn't mean that it listens to the radio a lot. It means its unstable relationship is going to break down. C14 only lasts a short time and then it breaks back down to nitrogen, but when it breaks down it throws off little particles. To oversimplify this, if you were walking past a piece of C14 with a Geiger counter, the little particles would strike the Geiger counter, and you would hear it click. You've seen movies where they are walking around with a Geiger counter looking for nuclear material, and it is clicking. Willard Libby received a Nobel Prize for the development of carbon dating. Willard Libby said, C14 breaks down in a predictable half life. About half of it changes back to N14 every 5,730 years. We will round it off to 6,000 for this analogy. In 6,000 years, it breaks down and half of it is gone, so if you walk past a piece of C14 that is brand new, you should get sixteen clicks per gram per minute. Therefore if your Geiger counter is registering sixteen clicks per minute, you have brand new C14. If you were able to check it 6,000 years later, half of it would be gone, and you should only get eight clicks per minute per gram. Therefore, if you are only getting eight clicks per gram per minute, you can assume that it has already gone through one half life, and it is now 6,000 years old. If you are only getting four clicks per minute, then it has gone through two half lives, so it is now twelve thousand years old. That is the principle of how carbon dating works. It is very simple and very neatly done.

Each of the radioactive elements has a different half life. C14 has a half life of 5,700 years. Uranium 235 has a half life of 700 million years. We can tell how old something is by seeing how much of the element is in radioactive form, and how much has decayed back to a normal, stable element, whether it is lead, argon, or nitrogen. This all sounds great, except the entire theory is based on a couple of faulty assumptions that cannot be proven.

This is an analogy of why carbon dating does not work. If you walked into a room and found a candle burning on a table, and you said, Mr. Hovind, who lit the candle? I would say, I don't know. I wasn't here when it was lit. We ask around to find out if anyone saw the candle being lit. Nobody saw it, but here it is burning. Well, let us figure out when it was lit. First, we measure the candle. We find out that the base of the candle holder is three inches; therefore, we subtract three inches for the base leaving seven inches of candle. It has now been established that the candle is seven inches tall. This is called empirical science. Empirical science is something that is testable and can be demonstrated. We now time the candle burning. As we watch it burn, we observe that the candle is burning one inch per hour. This is also empirical science. We now have two empirical facts. It is seven inches tall, and it burns at the rate of one inch per hour. The question is, when was it lit? Can you tell me? No. You can only tell me if you make two assumptions. Number one, how tall it was in the beginning? We do not know. Number two, has it always burned at the same rate? We do not know. Maybe it was skinnier and it burned faster. Maybe there was more

oxygen in the room, or maybe there was less oxygen in the room. Maybe the burn rate was different. If you assume that the candle was twelve inches tall, and you assume a constant burn rate, it had been burning for five hours. The answer is only as good as your assumptions.

Carbon dating is based on the assumption that the amount of C14 in the atmosphere has remained constant through all time. This is a very faulty assumption. As the magnetic field declines, more cosmic radiation gets through, and our magnetic field is getting weaker and weaker. Due to the fact that the magnetic field is decreasing, cosmic radiation causes the Northern Lights and the Southern Lights. If the magnetic field was once stronger, less radiation got through and less C14 was formed. It is true that an animal or plant today will give off about sixteen clicks per minute per gram, but 5,000 years ago when the magnetic field was stronger a brand new plant would only give off a few clicks per minute per gram because there was very little C14 in the atmosphere for them to breathe that would have been mixed in with the CO<sub>2</sub>. We cannot assume that C14 has always been consistent in the atmosphere. We know that it is constantly increasing. Willard Libby knew that it was increasing, and he chose to disregard the evidence. C14 is increasing more and more in our atmosphere, proving that the atmosphere is not more than 10,000 years old. Uranium lead and potassium argon dating methods work on basically the same principle. They all make some faulty assumptions.

If I found a dinosaur fossil and took it to a museum for carbon dating, they would say, Oh, Mr. Hovind, we cannot possibly carbon date this because it is too old. I would say, You cant date it because it is too old? They would say, Oh yes, this is a dinosaur bone, and dinosaurs lived about seventy million years ago. Carbon dating is only good for about 30,000 or 40,000 years. I would ask, Well, how would you date it if you cannot carbon date it? They would say, We simply use another method. *Each of the radioactive elements have a different half life.* We know that this bone is about 70 million years old (*U235 has a half life of 700 million.*) We would use the U<sup>235</sup> so that gives us a pretty accurate way of measuring objects between 50 million and 800 million years old. That bone fits in that range, so we will check for U235 instead of C14.

They brake off a piece and test it. They find the uranium-to-lead composition, and they say, Oh! This bone is ten million years old. Something went wrong. Lets try it again. They get another sample, break it off, check for uranium-to-lead composition, and this time it shows to be only two million years old. They will say, Something went wrong. The sample must have been contaminated. Lets try it again. They brake off another sample. They will continually test until they get an answer that is in the range that they are looking for which is 70 million years.

You see; everything must fit within the *geologic column*. The *geologic column* is the bible to the evolutionist. Any radiometric dating that is given that is outside the realm of the *geologic column* is rejected. They will say, We know that cant be right. We already know how old it is, approximately, based on the *geologic column*. That is where the fraud comes in. The *geologic column* is a hoax. If a bone did contain some carbon, uranium, and potassium, and they checked it three different ways, they would get three wildly different numbers.



Let me cite from an article that I read:

*Some Cat! The family cat died and was buried by the children. A few years later the young people wondered what was left of their cat, and dug it up. They were amazed to find that some of the bones appeared to be petrified. In order to find out, they sent it to the university lab without telling the nature of their discovery. As a result of the lab testing, they were informed that the bones were those of a cat that lived several million years ago and was an evolutionary ancestor of the modern cat.*

You can take a clam that is still alive, break off a piece of the shell, and send it to a university for carbon dating, and it will come back to be 4,000 to 5,000 years old. I don't want you to think that all dating methods are useless. They are not useless, but they are very much overblown in their importance. They are all based on very faulty assumptions. Don't fall for the statement, They proved it is so many millions of years old based on carbon dating.

## ***The Great Pyramid***

### ***Question.***

*Who built the Great Pyramid?*

I believe the Great Pyramid was built to be the Bible in stone. The Egyptians did not build it. It is the only pyramid with no hieroglyphics in it. The other pyramids were copies of the Great Pyramid. The Great Pyramid is very special. It does not have a cornerstone. The top stone is not there. The cornerstone was rejected by the builders just as the Bible says. Jesus Christ is the chief cornerstone; he is the stone cut out of the mountain, without hands, as told in the book of Daniel. He is the Rock of Offense, the Stone of Stumbling. The cornerstone on the pyramid has five sides, the number of grace.

In 822 AD, entrance was gained to the pyramid by tunneling through the exterior. They actually dug a tunnel through the solid rock and found the entrance by going backward. If they could have found the entrance, they could have just touched it and it would have swung open. When you enter into the pyramid, the passage leads downward. After a short distance you must make a choice. You can continue on the broad way that leads down to the pit, or you can choose the narrow way that leads up to the king's chamber. If you choose the narrow way to the king's chamber, you must go up one-hundred and fifty-three steps. One-hundred and fifty-three is a neat number. It appears in the Bible only once, in John 21:11. They cast their net into the sea, and gathered up all the fish, one-hundred and fifty-three great fishes. This is a parable in the Bible. One-hundred and fifty-three steps go up to the king's chamber by way of the narrow passage. There are so many things that are symbolic. There might be one-hundred and fifty-three nations in the world when the Lord comes and sets up His kingdom. There are one-hundred and sixty now, but some break apart and come together. There are going to be at least ten that will go together. The

European Common Market is probably the forerunner to that, if not it. I suspect that there will be one-hundred and fifty-three nations in the world when the Lord comes back.

If you look at the back of the dollar bill, it has a pyramid with an all-seeing eye. If you look carefully, the eye and the light above the pyramid are not touching the pyramid. There is a gap between them, and this is very important. The men who developed the symbol on the back of our dollar bill in 1776 were the *Illuminati* group. If you notice, the Roman numerals at the bottom of the pyramid denote the date 1776, and they are not there because of the Declaration of Independence they signed. It is there because that is the date the *Illuminati* was formed, and this was their symbol. Many of the wealthy and the super rich of this world have had a continuing conspiracy to control humanity by controlling the currency of this world. What they are trying to do is get all of humanity together so they can institute the light bearer, the all-seeing eye, as the ruler. It is not yet touching because he has not been instituted yet. That light bearer, the all-seeing eye, is Lucifer the devil. That is part of the *New Age Movement*. The purpose of the *New Age Movement* is to get everybody together under one government, one religion, and then institute Lucifer to be the leader. Guess what? It is not going to happen. You see; Jesus Christ is the chief cornerstone.

The Bible says that the new Jerusalem is going to measure 1,500 x 1,500 x 15,00 miles. Most people assume this to be a cube measurement. A pyramid can also be 1,500 x 1,500 x 1,500 miles. It might be that Jesus Christ is the light bearer, and since the city will be pure gold, translucent, it will not need any light. Jesus Christ is the light. When the chief cornerstone is put in place, it will light up the whole city. That is just something that is interesting to think about.

The numbers and measurements inside the kings chamber are remarkable. Inside the kings chamber there is a red granite coffin. The inside dimensions of that coffin are exactly the same dimensions as the ark of the covenant that the Jews hauled around in the wilderness. The ark of the covenant? It had the ten commandments in it, the pot of manna, and Aarons rod that budded. This are a lot of books that you can read on the Great Pyramid. It is a fascinating subject.

## ***The Red Sea Crossing***

### ***Question.***

*Where did Pharaoh and his army drown in the Red Sea?*

Many people have been looking for the place where Pharaoh and his army drowned in the Red Sea. Near the top, the Red Sea splits into the Gulf of Suez to the left and the Gulf of Aqaba to the right. Scholars have always thought that when the Israelites left Egypt they crossed the Red Sea, and then crossed the Gulf of Suez on the left. Ron Wyatt and many others have come to the conclusion that maybe they crossed the Red Sea at the Gulf of Aqaba. Maybe the Jews went all the way across the Sinai Peninsula and crossed the Red Sea. A dry river bed has been found that leads from Egypt all the way across the Sinai Peninsula right up to the Gulf of Aqaba. If they

stopped there, they would have come to a huge flat area. Mountains are on both sides that go right out into the water. There is no way to the right or left. If they followed the Y to the dry river bed they would have been trapped at the Red Sea. The Jews had been slaves for their entire existence, which meant they had never been out of Egypt. They didn't have any idea where they were going, so they followed the pillar of cloud and the pillar of fire. Apparently, God led the Jews all the way across the Sinai Peninsula, and they ended up at the Gulf of Aqaba. Pharaoh's spies probably went back and said, Ah ha! Pharaoh, they are trapped. Go get them! Pharaoh and his army went all the way across the Sinai Peninsula and found them trapped. It was there that God performed the miracle of parting the Red Sea. The children of Israel went across on dry ground, and Pharaoh's army drowned.

People have gone scuba diving in that location, and guess what they have found? At the bottom of the Red Sea, on each side of the Gulf of Aqaba, are pillars inscribed by King Solomon (figure 6-5). Inscribed on the pillars are: This is the place where they crossed the Red Sea. At the bottom of the Red Sea, there are chariot wheels that are not connected to the chariots. They are scattered all across that area. There are also chariots without any wheels attached. These pieces are all crusted over with coral at the bottom of the Gulf of Aqaba. There is a mountain on the right side of the Gulf of Aqaba called Jabal al-Law, which means, Mountain of Laws. I saw a video that shows the whole top of this mountain. The top of that mountain is black, as if it were burned. The Arabs think that is where Moses received the ten commandments. It's not even in the Sinai Peninsula. They are on the wrong side of the Gulf. On the other side is Mt. Sinai. Ten or fifteen miles away from Mt. Sinai, you can look down and see a huge bolder in the middle of a flat plane. This huge bolder has been split right in half. It is separated by about eighteen inches. This video is available by contacting Richard Reeves at Matthews, North Carolina, 704-847-0185. The video shows a huge rock that is a giant bolder in the middle of nowhere. It is just flat land. On both sides of the bolder, there are dry creek beds. At one time, water came pouring out of that rock and actually eroded the ground. They also discovered the cities of Sodom and Gomorra. The actual cities of Sodom and Gomorra are at the south end of the Dead Sea. You can't see the cities unless you are about five miles away. When you get right up next to them, they look just like cliffs of ash. If you dig into the ash, you will find little sulfur balls that have been burned out. The outer part is a crust of white sulfur that has been burned, sulfur and ash. The inner part is still yellow sulfur. The Bible says that it literally rained fire and brimstone on the cities of Sodom and Gomorra. I have about six or seven of those sulfur balls that a friend of mine sent to me when he visited that area.

You see; the Bible is right. You can count on it. The Bible is correct!!!

### ***Frequently asked questions on a variety of subjects***

#### ***Question.***

*What about the purity of the genes when the races were first created, and where did Cain get his wife?*

There were no deformed genes or mutations as we have today. Today, each person carries quite a heavy genetic load. That is why if you marry someone that is closer than your first cousin, there is a good chance that the babies will be deformed because both carry similar mutations. The deformities will most likely show up in the baby in the form of six fingers, hemophilia, etc. Some of these very common mutations happen from marrying too close to the blood line. Sometimes cats will breed back to an aunt, to their own mother or to their sister. This will produce offspring that have six or eight toes, or some mutation along that order. Sometimes the defects are very serious, and sometimes they are not so serious.

When God first made the world, there was not a genetic load. Therefore, they married sisters in the first generation, and in the second generation, they married cousins. After that, they were diversified enough to be no problem. A lot of people ask where did Cain get his wife. He married a sister. Adam and Eve probably had hundreds of children. They lived 800 years, and one could have a lot of children in 800 years.

### ***Question.***

*Where did the different races come from?*

I am very often asked, Where did the black race come from? You might want to ask the question, Where did the white race come from? Adam may have been black.

There are three possibilities in Scripture as to the origin of the races. The Bible is not clear on this subject. I think that it would be wise not to be dogmatic. If the Bible is not dogmatic on a particular subject then you should not be dogmatic about your answer. Some people say that God put a mark on Cain, and that is what the Scriptures reveal. God did put a mark on Cain. Some believe that means he became the first black man. That is not what the Bible says. It says that he put a mark on him. Look at Genesis 4:15, ***And the LORD said unto him, Therefore whosoever slayeth Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the LORD set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him.*** Some people think that he became a giant. That is a very real possibility, but we don't know for sure.

The first theory that Cain became a black man, and that is how the black race was derived, presents a problem. The problem with this theory is that it doesn't explain the other races, and it doesn't address the problem with the flood. The flood would limit them back to one family. There is one argument that says one of Noah's boys married a black girl, and the genetic pool was preserved through the flood. I personally do not believe this theory.

The second theory that people hold is that the black race came when Noah cursed his grandson Canaan. I believe Noah had accidentally become drunk. Fermentation was not even possible before the flood. The canopy of water protected the earth prior to the flood. They could not have made wine or alcohol even if they had wanted to make it. It simply could not be done. Therefore, Noah, a preacher of righteousness, became drunk, and his son Ham laughed at his father's nakedness. Noah awoke from his sleep and said, ***...Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his***

**brethren.** Some people take that to mean that Canaan became the first black man. The black race has been persecuted down through history; however, I personally do not buy that idea.

The third theory from Scripture is derived from the Tower of Babel where God confused the languages. The races were either miraculously created or the races were a natural byproduct of small groups of people who spoke the same language going off to their own place and inbreeding for generations within that small group of the same genetic pool. If that were the case, mutations would become dominate within a small population.

I personally hold to the Tower of Babel explanation, because the races also have similar languages. The racial barrier and the language barrier seem to go together. Therefore, the Tower of Babel is probably the best explanation. It would be advisable not to be dogmatic because the Bible is not clear on this matter. I do know this, all nations are of one blood, and we are not superior to the blacks, or the Orientals, or any other color, just because we may be white. We are all the same, and I am very much against racism!

### ***Question.***

*Is it true that a chromosome has been found that proves that homosexuals are born with the inability to choose their life style?*

I understand that all the research that has been done on this has been found to be false. There has been research that indicates nearly all homosexuals come from families that have a weak father figure, and a dominate mother. I believe that research shows that there is a social link where the children are raised to be wimps or whatever. I say that homosexuality is a sin, not a sickness. It is a sin according to Scripture.

The emphasis on eliminating gays in the military has taken the emphasis off adultery and fornication, which is also a sin for which they were to be stoned in the Old Testament. People are always quick to point out, Hey, we ought to stone the homosexuals! What is good for the goose is also good for the gander. If you believe stoning the homosexuals is still valid, then you ought also to stone those that commit adultery or fornication. As much as I am against homosexuality, homosexuality has drawn our attention away from other sins.

I do not buy the so-called chromosome link, and I believe that research has been shown to be erroneous. There never was a chromosome link.

### ***Question.***

*Who were the giants mentioned in Genesis chapter 6? The Bible says there were giants in the earth in those days.*

I have read many theories on this subject, but I have never read one that has totally convinced me of the correct answer. The Bible is clear about the giants. Some say that God put a mark on Cain, and he became a giant. The Giant race from Cains descendants then began to intermarry with Seths

descendants, the godly race. Some people say that demons came in human form and cohabited with women and begat half demon and half human, and their offspring were men of renown; people that were able to great things. They were supposed to have had wings on their feet, and to be able to fly. This is where the Greek mythology originated, which may not be too far fetched. Some believe that this cohabitation was a satanic attempt to corrupt the blood line of Judah from which the Messiah was to come. I get articles sent to me all the time about who these people were. Again, this is an area that I cannot be dogmatic about because the Bible doesn't give a lot of information, and I really don't know who they were. This is one of the first questions that I intend to ask the Lord when I get to Heaven. My first question, believe it or not, will be, Did Adam and Eve have a belly button? I don't know why, but that has bothered me for years. There was a church in California that actually split over that question. One group said, Yes, they did because they would not be complete without a belly button. The other group said, No, they didn't because they were never born. That is where the umbilical cord connects before birth. They actually split the church over that argument. One group went across town and started a new church. I saw the article in the paper. I couldn't believe it. The name of the church was, The Church of the Navelites. Only in California!

***Question.*** *Are there extraterrestrial life forms? What about life on other planets?*

One of the motives of NASA is to prove the theory of evolution by using taxpayer dollars. Millions and billions of dollars are spent trying to prove the theory of evolution. I would like to tell the government, Hey, I would like an equal amount to prove the Bible is true. They would say, You are crazy! They are not thinking because all they are trying to do is prove a religion. Carl Pagan (I mean Segan) and his group are attempting to look for signals of intelligent life on other planets. I have said many times that I do not believe that there is much intelligent life on this planet. I do not believe that there is any intelligent life on other planets that can be proven scripturally because the Bible says that Eve is the mother of all living. It is too hard to get around that verse; plus, there was no death until Adam sinned. I take that to mean there never been any deaths in the universe until Adam sinned. I believe that sin brought death into the universe according to Romans 5:12. I think God made all the stars just for us to marvel at His great intelligence and wisdom. Nobody has ever proven the existence of another planet around any other star except the nine that we know of around our star, the sun. Therefore, there may not be any other stars in the solar system that have planets around them. There may be, but we cannot prove it.

***Question.***

*What about UFOs, where do they fit into the picture?*

The only book that I have read that really struck home with me giving a possible explanation for UFOs was the book published in Australia called

*The Cosmic Conspiracy* by Stan Deyo. Stanley Deyo, a Christian, is a genius who wrote the book way over my head. Deyo says that there are two kinds of UFOs. First, there are US government owned and operated UFOs. That really got my attention. The US government has UFOs? He said that the second kind is the satanically-owned and operated UFOs. He says that Satan has always used that mode of transportation to get around because the devil can only be at one place at one time, whereas God is all places at all times. That may be far fetched, so please do not accuse me of saying this is true. I do not know if it is true, but it is an interesting theory.

Deyo tells an interesting story. Back in the 1920s there were experiments taking place in Red Gap, Australia, with electrogravitic propulsion. I mentioned this in a church some time back, and a man who is a physicist came to me and said, Brother Hovind, nobody is supposed to know about electrogravitic propulsion. How did you find out about it? I said, I read. Deyo states in his book that he used to work on UFOs, that is, he used to build them. He said that in 1920 they did experiments with electrogravitic propulsion. The idea was to charge an object up using a van de Graaff generator to obtain electrogravitic propulsion. If you were to stand on a block of wood and put your hand on the aluminum ball of a van de Graaff generator and flip the switch on causing a rubber belt to go round and round, you will become charged up. When you reach 10,000 volts, your hair stands on end. What happens when you get to 100,000 volts? It really stands up then, at least for those who have hair. What is going to happen when you reach a million volts? If you were to reach a million volts, and you were holding a 2x4 in your hand sticking out into the air, it would burst into flames. You would not feel a thing, but all of a sudden it would start burning. It is a strange phenomenon, and there are extremes. We have solids, liquids, and gases. What happens if you keep heating the gas? You would get plasma. What if you keep heating it? We do not know because we are unable to get gas that hot. Maybe there are phenomenon at the extreme that we do not know about. The idea was that an object could be charged to the extreme. If you could charge an object with enough voltage, millions and millions of volts, it would become immune, or inert to gravity. Gravity would not have any effect on it. Deyo said that they charged these steel plates up to several million volts and they floated around the room. They did further experiments to try to direct and steer them and recharge them without touching them. This may be far fetched, I don't know, but it might also be true.

The principles behind electrogravitic propulsion are very different from the principle behind jet propulsion. As a jet takes off, the passenger would be forced back into the seat by the G force because the jet has a motor in it and the passenger does not have a motor. When a jet comes to a stop, the passenger should have a seat belt on or he will fly forward due to inertia. However, with electrogravitic propulsion all the rules would change. It would be very different. Every atom would be drawn electrically. The passengers inside the craft drawn by electrogravitic propulsion would not need a seat belt. The vehicle could go from zero to five-thousand miles per hour in a second, and the passengers on board would not feel a thing. The vehicle could go from five-thousand miles per hour to zero, and the passengers inside would not move at all. The witnesses that have reported

UFO activity have described them to have instantaneous start-to-stop movements, which would kill a person in a jet. Some believe it is all demonic activity. It may be, or it may be US government top secret aircraft.

**Question.**

*How was the Red Sea parted?*

There are always those who try to give a physical explanation for some of the things in the Bible. The only possible explanation for the parting of the Red Sea that I can find would be a miracle. The Bible says that the water stood in heaps on the sides. Some people say that it was an earthquake that caused tidal waves to meet, and then they parted allowing the people to run across. That is a bit far fetched. I don't buy that at all. Some have said that it was really the Reed Sea, and it was just shallow water, so the people just walked across. That would be even a bigger miracle because now they have Pharaoh's whole army drowning in ankle deep water. Pharaoh says, Okay everybody, lay down and stick your head in the water, and don't come up until I tell you to. Remember also, the Bible says that they crossed on dry ground. How are you going to explain that one away? No, it was a miracle. God would not be much of a God if he could not perform a miracle. He made all the laws that govern this universe, such as gravity, and time. He is not bound by any of them. He is God.

**Question.**

*When was the fall of Satan? Did it come before the creation of the world? Was there a period of time from the creation until the six days when God made everything? What about the Gap theory?*

I believe the Genesis account is to be taken literally just as it was written. It was six literal twenty-four hour days. There was no gap. There was no period of time before the original creation. There was actually no time. God made time as well as matter and space. I do not think that Satan fell from heaven until about one-hundred years after the creation. He could not have fallen before the creation because he was spoken about in the book of Ezekiel as being good while in the garden. Look at Ezekiel 28:13-15, ***Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.*** He was Lucifer, a good angel, or cherub, and he was in the Garden. The Garden of Eden wasn't made until day six, so that shoots the *Gap Theory* full of holes right there. Not only that, but Jesus said in Matthew 19:4 that the creation of Adam and



Eve was the beginning. Read what it says, ***And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female.*** Romans 5:12 says that there was no death until Adam sinned, ***Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.*** Those who say that Satan fell from heaven and wiped out the preadamic civilization are placing death before sin. They have just eliminated the need for Christ to die on the cross. There was no death until sin came into the world. Exodus 20:11 states, ***For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth...*** This is found in the middle of the ten commandments.

God made the whole thing in six literal twenty-four hour days, including time, including the angels, and everything that is. What day he made the angles is not known, but Satan did not fall until after the creation, maybe even one-hundred or so years later. All that we know is Adam was one-hundred and thirty when Seth was born. That is the first date given in Scripture. Before he had Seth, they had Cain and Abel, but their dates are not given. Before he had Cain and Abel, they were removed from the garden. Therefore, it would have been somewhere around a one-hundred year span where Satan may have become jealous of the fellowship Adam and Eve had with God. Satan may have observed their relationship for one-hundred years, and said, Hey, I want them to worship me! I want to rule humanity. I want to walk with them in the garden. I will ascend unto the high heavens. I will take over the seat of the Most High. I will, I will, I will.

My theory is, and I cannot prove it, but I am pretty convinced that Satan did not fall until one-hundred years after the creation. The fall could not have been in the original creation because he was still the light bearer in the Garden of Eden.

### ***Question.***

*What is time?*

When I was in Mobile, Alabama a couple of years ago, a friend of mine that I had known for years, happened to be at the church where I was preaching. He came to see me after the service, and he said, Brother Hovind, that was an interesting presentation. Let me show you something. I said, Yeah, what have you got? He said, Lets go out and get an ice-cream or something. We went to the Dairy Queen and got an ice-cream cone. We sat down at the table, and he took two 3x5 cards out of his pocket, and he wrote on one, Mr. Flat, and he wrote on the other one, Mrs. Flat. He laid them on the table, and he said, Brother Hovind, you taught geometry. You understand what a plane is, right? I said, Oh yes, I understand what a plane is. He said, I want you to imagine that we have two people, Mr. Flat and Mrs. Flat, and they live in Flat Land. They have only two dimensions. They have only width and length. They have no height at all. They have no comprehension of the third dimension. Their whole world is flat. Everything that they see is in Flat Land. That is their entire world, a two dimensional world. I said, Okay, I have you so far. He said, Now, when Mr. Flat looks at Mrs. Flat, what does he see? I said, He sees a straight line. He said, That is

correct. He can walk around Mrs. Flat and realize that she is indeed a rectangle based upon depth perception. He only sees one dimension, length, but he understands the second dimension based upon experience. She really has two dimensions to her. You and I live in a three dimensional world. We actually see only two dimensions. We can see the width and the height, but we perceive depth based upon experience. We don't really see three dimensions, we only see two of them. Mr. and Mrs. Flat only see one dimension, and understand the second. I said, Okay Ron, I have got it. We see two dimensions, we understand the third, we live in a three dimensional world. He said, Okay, here is Mr. Flat and Mrs. Flat in Flat Land. This table top is where they live. Suppose you, as a three-dimensional creature, wanted to reveal yourself to these two dimensional creatures. You would have to project yourself into their world. Suppose you stick your finger through the table, and Mr. Flat comes over. He looks at the cross section of your finger, which is a circle, and he says, Ah ha! I have seen Kent Hovind. He is a circle. A little further over you stick three fingers through the table. Mrs. Flat goes over, and she sees three circles. She says, Oh, no honey, I've seen Kent Hovind. He is three circles. They are going to argue for awhile, and they are going to split the church. They are going to start the church of the one circle and the church of the three circles, but neither one of them really have any comprehension of who you are. You cannot put a three dimensional object into two dimensions in a way that it can be fully comprehended. It simply cannot be done. Now, with that thought in mind, maybe God has more than three dimensions.

That would appear to be the case according to an unusual verse in the book of Ephesians 3:18, ***May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height. And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.*** Four dimensions, is that what it says? The breadth, and length, and depth, and height, and to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge? Could it be that God has entirely new dimensions that we really cannot comprehend in our present state? As Mr. Flat and Mrs. Flat were reclining on the table, Ron said, Kent, watch this. He put his hand on top of both of them. He said, Do you realize that I can be closer to them than they can be to each other? They would be totally unaware of my presence because I am just barely in the next dimension. I'm above them, and under them where they do not see me, but I am closer to them than they can ever be to each other. Did you know that Jesus Christ is closer than a brother? The Bible has a lot of verses about how the Lord upholds us with His right hand, how He standeth around us, through us, above us. I think there is a whole lot more to God than we understand. Have you ever had a problem in mathematics class and you said, Teacher, I don't get it, I just don't get it. The teacher explains it over and over again, and finally you say, Ah! I get it.

I think that one day when we as Christians get to heaven, we are going to be there for just a few seconds, and we are going to look around, and say, Ah! I get it. For right now, we are locked in a three-dimensional world. We are locked into time. You cannot go faster into the future, and you cannot go back to the past. You are stuck in the present. God is not stuck in the present. God is not stuck in space or time or matter. He permeates

everything. Genesis 1:1 has the best illustration of the Trinity . ***In the beginning...*** That is time. Time has three parts to it, past, present, and future. Where can one go where he is not in time? He cannot get away from it, can he? In the beginning, time, God created the heavens space. Space has three dimensions, depth, width, and height. There is the trinity again. Where can one be where one is not in space someplace? Nowhere. In the beginning, God created the heaven and the earth matter. Matter has three dimensions, solid, liquid, and gas. There is the Trinity of trinities right there in Genesis 1:1. In ten words God said more than anybody else could say in a book. It is amazing. We serve an amazing Lord.

### ***Question.***

*Is it possible to travel through time?*

I have another illustration that may help you understand time. Light travels at 186,000 miles per second. That means, if you went 186,000 miles away, turned around and looked back at the earth, you would be seeing the earth one second ago. It takes light about 1 1/2 seconds to get to the moon. A person standing on the moon looking back at the earth is actually seeing the earth 1 1/2 seconds ago. It takes light eight minutes to get from the sun to the earth. A person on the sun would see the earth eight minutes ago. It takes light five hours to reach Pluto. A person standing on Pluto, looking back at the earth would actually be seeing the earth five hours ago. Are you seeing the past? It takes light four and one-half years to reach Alpha Centauri or Proxima Centauri. If a person was standing on Alpha Centauri looking back at the earth, he would be seeing everything four and one-half years ago. Suppose that you were able to travel at the speed of thought instead of the speed of light. You could take off somewhere, turn around, and look at your own past. You couldnt do anything about it, but you could watch it. Maybe on judgment day, God is going to say, You did this on such and such date. One might say, Oh, no Lord, I didnt do that. He will say, Okay, lets move court out here. SWISH. Okay, lets watch it coming again. Everything that was ever said, thought, or done is still traveling out through space. WOW! Isnt that a frightening thought? There is a way to get rid of it. The blood of Jesus Christ cleanses us from all sin. We are going to go out into space for my judgment day, about forty light years away and then turn around and look at Kent Hovinds life. There he is crawling around East Peoria, Illinois. I didnt really crawl around the whole city. There will be times that part of my video will be blanked out by the blood of Christ. All of the bad is going to be blanked out. Only the good is going to be left. My forty-year video will probably fit on about a fifteen minute tape. The blood of Jesus Christ is a wonderful thing. You had better make sure that you have been saved when that time comes, and it is coming.

If you were flying in a helicopter over the Grand Canyon, you could see people getting into a raft and they could see you. They push out into the river, and they start going further down the Canyon. An hour later, another group takes off in a raft. They can see you, and you can see them, but they cant see the group in front of them. Every hour a new group takes off down the Canyon. None of the groups can see each other, but all of the groups

can see you. You can see all of the groups simultaneously. If you have two-way radio systems, you could talk to each of the groups from the helicopter. You could warn group B, Hey, rapids ahead! They can't see them yet because the rapids are around the curve. This is a rough analogy of what time is like. The river would represent time. We happen to be stuck right here in 1996, drifting along one year at a time. God, from His perspective, can see all of time. God can see right now what is going to happen in 1996, and 1997, and what happened in 1997 BC. He sees all three simultaneously. It is not 1995 in heaven. There is no time there. When God is all finished with this world, he is going to stop time again. The first thing that you need to do when you get to heaven is take your watch off, and throw it away. There will be no time there.

Somebody asked me one time, What did God do for billions of years before he made Adam and Eve? There wasn't billions of years before he made Adam and Eve. He also made time when he made the world. If you stop and think about it, that means once upon a time there was a time when there was no time. Figure out that one. The idea of God having more dimensions than we can possibly understand is an interesting thought.

### ***Question.***

*If the earth is six to seven thousand years old, how do you explain starlight, which is said to be billions of light years away?*

People ask me this question all the time, Wait a minute, Brother Hovind! If the earth is only six or seven-thousand years old, why do we see starlight? How did the light from those stars get here which are billions of light years away? If the world is only six-thousand years old and those stars are billions of light years away, their light should not have reached the earth yet. We should see the stars blinking on all the time as light from new stars reach us. That is an interesting thought except for a couple of faulty assumptions. Number one, how do you know how far away that star is? How does one measure the distance to a star? What does one use, a Lufkin, a Craftsman, or what? What kind of ruler would be used? The way to measure the distance to stars is by using parallax trigonometry. I taught trigonometry for years, and I thoroughly loved the subject. If you want to solve a triangle, you have to have one side and two angles, or two sides and one angle. With this information, you can solve the unknown length of one side of a triangle. It is simple trigonometry. Any high school senior can do that if he has learned his trigonometry. If you are looking at a star, and the person next to you is also looking at a star, the both of you have formed a triangle. The distance between you and the other person is one base, and the angle at which you each look at the star is the two angles, but you are going to be limited to how far you can see. You can only calculate the distance based on how accurately you can calculate the angle at which you can see the star. The farthest that we can get away on earth is eight-thousand miles. That would be one on opposite sides of the earth. Now, we have an eight-thousand mile base looking at the sun 93 million miles away. That is a long skinny triangle, and that is just to the sun. The closest star, Alpha Centauri, is four and one-half light years away.

They have tried to enlarge the base of the triangle by looking at the star in January, and then looking at it six months later in June as we travel around the sun. That would create a huge triangle base, comparatively speaking. The base would be 186 million miles in length. That sounds impressive except 186 million miles is only sixteen light minutes in length. It would take only sixteen minutes for light to go all the way across the earth's orbit. Stop and think about that for a minute. They are going to tell me that they can calculate the distance to a star, and the base of their triangle is only sixteen minutes apart. How many minutes are in a year? There are a lot, about 525,600 minutes. The farthest that they can measure distance to stars is about sixty light years away. If somebody says that a star is ten billion light years away, you ask them how they know that. Who measured it, and how did they measure it? Show me the mathematics please. You would get an angle that is so close to zero that nobody could measure it. The textbooks all agree that that one cannot measure a star more than sixty light years away, and some say one-hundred light years away. I'll give them two hundred light years, but when they say five billion light years away, I would say that they do not know anymore that you or I do.

The first point on the starlight question is: We don't know how far away the stars are. They might be billions of light years away. I'm not saying that they are not. I am saying that we cannot measure it. Some say, What about the red shift? The red shift is the Doppler effect of light. Nobody knows what is causing the red shift. Maybe light becomes tired of traveling great distances. That cannot be used to prove that light is great distances away. The star could be very close, traveling away from us, and still give us the red shift.

The second observation about starlight is: If God is able to make the stars, he is certainly able to make the light already showing on earth as a mature creation. Did Adam and Eve have a belly button? Did the trees in the Garden of Eden have rings in them? Were Adam and Eve fully grown the second they were created? Was there any appearance of age? God made the stars in order to be a light upon the earth. The light was showing the instance they were created.

The third observation is: We do not know that the speed of light has always been the same. Maybe light traveled faster when God first made it. Some would say, No, the speed of light is a constant. That sounds impressive, but you really can't see it. If you are traveling down the highway at sixty miles an hour, and turn your headlights on, how fast is the light going from your headlights? Compared to you, it is going at the speed of light. Compared to someone on the sidewalk it is going at the speed of light plus sixty miles an hour. The speed of light is not necessarily constant. We do not know that light has always traveled at the same speed. We don't even know what light is. Nobody knows what it is, so they certainly can't prove that it has always been traveling at the same speed.

An interesting thing about light is that it can be broken up into the color spectrum of the rainbow, red, orange, yellow, green, blue, and violet. The color spectrum is only a small piece of the electromagnetic spectrum. Did you know that bugs can see ultraviolet light, but you cannot see it? Did you know that bugs cannot see red? That is why you can put a red or yellow

light out on your porch, and bugs will not see it. They think it is black. Their eyes pick up different wave lengths. Now, think about this. Suppose when we get to heaven God gives you the five senses that you currently have, sight, taste, touch, smell, and hearing but he expands your sense of sight. He now gives you an eyeball that is capable of seeing all the frequencies on the spectrum. That means that you would be able to see the radio waves going through the air as a color. Also, you would be able to see the sounds that come from a piano. If someone were talking, their voice would not only make sounds that you could hear, but it would also make colors. You could see the sounds. That means in heaven there may be brand new colors. I don't mean new shades of the colors that we now see. I'm talking about new colors that are unimaginable. That is why heaven has to be so large. It is for the ladies closets. Can you imagine the clothes that they are going to have to have with all of these brand new colors?

Maybe when we get to heaven God will give us ears that can not only pick up 20,000 cycles per second, 20 kHz, but pick up the whole spectrum. Maybe when you get to heaven you might be able to hear the colors. In the book of I Corinthians 2:9 the Bible states, ***But as it is written, eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.*** Also, when Paul was rocked to sleep (I mean stoned) outside the city of Lystra, he was caught up to the third heaven. When he got up to heaven the Lord said, Paul, it's good to see you hear, son! Paul looks around and says, WOW! The Lord said, Hey, Paul, calm down. I know that it is great up here, but you can't stay. I want you to go back down, and get back into that body, and go preach some more. Paul said, Lord, I would be glad to go preach for you, but would you give me a different body? This one is really beat. Look at it. They threw rocks at it. They beat it up bad. It's all busted up. The Lord said, No, Paul. People wouldn't recognize you if I gave you a new body. Go get in that one.

Paul went back down, and as they were dragging that old body out to the garbage heap, he climbed back into that wreck of a carcass, and arose from the dead. The disciples said, Paul, we thought that you were dead! Paul said, I was! They said, Paul, where have you been. Paul said, I have been to heaven. They said, What was it like? Paul said, I saw things that is not lawful for man to utter. I could not possibly describe them to you. Could you explain colors to a blind man? Where would you start when trying to explain colors to a blind man? You could not do it, could you? Could you explain sound to a deaf man? No. Can you explain heaven to an earthling? No. I know this, for the next fourteen years, the Apostle Paul was eager to die so he could go to heaven. He said to the Philippian Church, ***For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you.*** When Paul would go to a city and start preaching they would say: Paul, if you keep preaching, we are going to kill you. Paul would say anxiously, Oh, really! Let's go, man! I'm ready to go! What do you do with a fellow like that? You kill him and send him to heaven. That is what he wants.

I think that we get too wrapped up in this world. We have no comprehension of what is coming. We are walking by faith. Paul was

walking by sight. You can get even more rewards than Paul if you work for the Lord now because you are walking by faith not by sight.

**Question.**

*Could evolution have happened in giant leaps, known as punctuated equilibrium?*

Goldsschmidt proposed that idea back in the 1940s. It has just been revised by Nyles Eldridge, the curator of the Museum of Natural History in New York, and Stephen Gould of Harvard University. I talked with Nyles Eldridge when he came to Pensacola and spoke at the University of West Florida. I came to hear him speak and even helped him fix his slide projector. I was real nice to the guy. After he gave a boring lecture on evolution for about an hour, I went up to him and gave him my card. I said, Dr. Eldridge, I know that you strongly believe in evolution. It is obvious from your presentation, and I have read some of your work. On the back of my business card, it states, Ill pay \$10,000 for anybody with empirical evidence (scientific proof) for evolution. I went on to say, I know that you believe very strongly in evolution. If you ever get any real proof for it, give me a call. Ill pay you \$10,000. That night he was speaking to the UWF students and teachers on the dangers of creationism in America. I was in the next building speaking to a group of students and teachers on creationism at the same time. I had ten times more people in my crowd than he had in his, and he held up my business card for his crowd. He said, This is an example of what I mean when I say how dangerous creationism is. This guy says there is no evidence for evolution. There is lots of evidence for evolution. They always say that, and I say, Show me some. They will say, Well, there is just lots of it. Ill say, Show me one. They will say, Theres just lots of it. They never present any evidence because there isnt any.

I corresponded with Stephen Gould to try to schedule a debate for October 1993, and he refused. I was going to speak near Harvard and contacted him to schedule a debate *punctuated equilibrium*. The idea they present is called *punctuated equilibrium*, that is, there is no evidence for gradual change. There are no missing links. Therefore, evolution must have happened rapidly. In other words, a lizard laid an egg, and a chicken hatched out. That is the general idea behind *punctuated equilibrium*.

What this really says is, Since we cant find any missing links, so that proves evolution happened rapidly. Since there is no proof, that proves it. There are two ways to look at that. It might prove that evolution didnt happen at all, but that is not allowed to be discussed. This is what is being taught in our textbooks.

**Question.**

*What can I do to change what is being published in public school textbooks?*

Nobody has time to read all the textbooks unless that is their full-time job. Ron and Norma Gabler are great Christians that live in Longview, Texas.

They read and write a review of every textbook that comes out stating what is good and what is not. Typically, public schools buy one course every year. They will buy science books one year; then the next year English books; and the next year history. They rotate and the books last about six years. Out of the fifty states in America, twenty-two have a state textbook selection committee who meets to select textbooks. There are probably twenty publishers that want to sell their books; so, they send a sample copy to the state textbook selection committee. Texas and California are the big ones the publishers solicit. The state textbook selection committee looks at the twenty different publishers, and they pick out five or six approved books. These selected books are then sent to the county; then, the county textbook selection committee has to pick from that list of five. Some states do not even have a state textbook selection committee; so, the counties can pick any book they want.

What happens is, people like the Gablers review the books. A publisher such as Prentice Hall produces a book, and there will be many mistakes in it such as typographical errors. The Gablers spot these errors, and they will write to Prentice Hall, and say, Sorry, you have 415 errors in this book. Before you can present it to Texas for consideration, we want all of these errors corrected. The publisher may have already printed eight-million books. They will say, Okay, we will fix them. They fix them, and print the second edition. The first edition with all the mistakes will be sold to the other states. They have to get rid of them somewhere. You probably will not find any of the books that are real strong on the creationist stand and against evolution. You can at least get some that are not so blatantly anti-Christian. Of the twenty available books, there will be a range from bad to really bad; so, pick the bad ones instead of the really bad ones for your children. In the mean time, you can write to the other publishers that you reject. You can say to them, We did not select your book because on page eighty four you mentioned evolution as a proven fact. Evolution is not a proven fact. If you were to remove statements of this type, we might consider your book in the future. All the publisher wants is money. They are trying to sell their books. It is a business. If they get responses from Christians by the thousands from across the country saying, We did not choose your book because... They will change what is published in the books. It is really the textbook publisher that has put evolution in and has taken God out, and we have let it happen. It is 100 percent our fault.

### ***Question.***

*How did the second law of thermodynamics apply in the Garden of Eden?*

The *second law of thermodynamics* states that everything tends to fall apart, and break down or get worse with time. I would say that in the original creation that the *second law of thermodynamics* did not apply. Everything was preserved by the Lord. The Bible says in II Peter chapter 3 that the earth is being reserved today for judgment. God is preserving things to some extent. Things are steadily winding down. The earth is slowing down. The sun is burning up. I don't believe that the *second law of*



*thermodynamics* operated in the original creation. God intended for them to live forever. They could have lived and not aged -- forever.

***Question.***

*Is there such a thing as global warming?*

You will find many scientists who argue that the earth is cooling off, and we are going into another ice age. I believe that man has abused the environment to some degree. There is no question that we have not been careful with the environment. I do not think that we ought to pollute the environment, but should the government be the big brother to regulate that, is another question. I say, No! I think that there is a whole lot more smoke than there is fire to the environmentalist movement.

What I think happened is, the hippies of the sixties are now the college professors. They are still radical Communists who still want to destroy this country. One of the things they must do to be successful is bankrupt this country, make the currency useless, and put the people in poverty. Environmental issues are a great way to bankrupt the country. They can put smog controls on your car that make your car cost an extra two-thousand dollars and still be less efficient. When it breaks down, you cannot fix it yourself. Try to take your distributor or your carburetor apart as compared to the older cars. What they should do, instead of putting all these pollution control devices on the cars so they get less pollution per gallon, which causes them to get fewer miles per gallon, is give rewards. For example, if a car maker produces a car that will get fifty miles per gallon, they would not be required to include any pollution control devices on that vehicle. There are many carburetors that have been designed that will get two-hundred miles per gallon. The Pogue carburetor was designed back in the 1930s, and it allowed a vehicle to get well over two-hundred miles per gallon on any vehicle. Mr. Pogue was bought out, and is no longer allowed to build the carburetor. Standard Oil and some of the other big oil companies didn't want people getting two-hundred miles per gallon. They sell gasoline; so, they offered Mr. Pogue eight-million dollars for his design. They parked the design on the shelf.

The environmentalist issue is a smoke screen for Communist activity to get more control so that you have to get a permit for everything. You will have to get permission from big brother, the government. The ozone is not a problem. The ozone hole is a natural occurring phenomenon. It fluctuates all the time. The ozone is thicker now than it was thirty years ago. There is no ozone over Antarctica because there doesn't need to be ozone there because the sunlight never shines directly on that area. Sunlight causes the formation of ozone, which, by the way, is poisonous. It is true that aerosols destroy ozone. One volcano can do more damage to the ozone in one day than all of humanity has done in all of history combined. They now put regulations on man like, getting rid of R-12 refrigerant, and using a very costly and inefficient replacement. Automobile air conditioners cost \$900 more in 1993 than they did in 1992 due to the different refrigerants that are now required all because R-12 destroys ozone. Now, everybody has to pay \$900 more, work all those extra hours, drive all those extra miles, and

pollute the environment even more so we can earn that extra \$900. It is counter productive, and it is silly.

I think that we should protect the environment. I try very hard. I am not a radical about it, but I am cautious to take care of what God has given us. I recycle as much as I can. There is more smoke than fire, and the real purpose for the environmental movement is control, not to save the environment. That is not what they really want.

***Question.***

*How do they know which bones go together when they put the skeletons together?*

If you saw a tangled up pile of bones, it would be pretty tough to know how to connect them. There were many goofs made in the early days when putting bones together. I think most of those are pretty well worked out today. Have you ever seen a Keyser automobile; a car built in the 1950s? Suppose I asked you to go to a junkyard and find a Keyser that has been smashed. I want you to look around all the different junkyards and find thirty or forty different Keyzers. You will find that some are smashed on the right side and some are smashed on the left, some on the top, and some in the front. By looking at thirty different wrecked Keyzers, I want you to draw me a sketch of what you think a Keyser looks like.

You could do that. If you saw enough of them in fragments, you could get the picture pretty soon. That is kind of what they have done with dinosaur bones. They find a leg here, a backbone there, and sometimes the whole back end of one will be found. Sometimes they find the front end of one. Through the years, they have worked that out pretty well. I don't believe that it is worth arguing about dinosaur anatomy. They probably have them together right. There may be some more goofs, but it isn't worth arguing about. As far as which bone goes where, sometimes they are found together. If you find one set together, and then you find another pile of bones, you could compare those bones to the completed set that was found.

***Question.***

*Why wouldn't the ice meteor melt as it entered the atmosphere?*

If you had three-hundred degrees below zero snow, and enough of it, it would be overwhelming. It would be like spraying water on a fire, some of it becomes vaporized, but if you spray enough of it, some will soak in. This ice meteor is just a theory, and I cannot prove it. The concept of the ice meteor did not originate with me. There is a great book on this subject from the 1960s called *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epic*. It is about a four-hundred page book devoted to the ice-meteor theory. It does, however, solve a lot of problems.

***Question.***

*What is or who is the Illuminati?*

There are many good books written on the *Illuminati*. These books refer to a conspiracy. There is definitely a conspiracy, but I don't think that it is a human conspiracy. I don't believe there is a smoke-filled room where a group of men get together, and decide to teach evolution in all the schools. I believe that it is at a much higher level. I believe that it is a Satanic conspiracy. The reason these different people come to the same conclusion is not because they all met together; it is because they all work for the devil. He is their leader and they don't even know it. It is a spiritual war, not a physical war. Individuals like the Rockefellers, and the Rothchilds, and other millionaires, are not the enemy. We can love them and win them to the Lord. The public school teachers, and professors that are teaching evolution, are not the enemy. Win them to the Lord. They can be saved like anybody else. The devil is the enemy.

Public school teachers are allowed to teach creation in the class room. Write to the Institute for Creation Research in California. Their publishing house is Master Books, and they have a toll free number (800-999-3777) if you would like to get their catalog. You can get the back issues of Impact Articles for ten cents each. They started printing monthly publications back in 1977. They have some fascinating articles. They are up to article number 260 now, so you could send them about \$26 and get all the back issues for the past fifteen years. This is tremendous research material. In one of the back issues, they feature the 1972 Supreme Court decision. In 1972 Louisiana passed a law that required teachers to teach creationism. The ACLU (*The American Communist Lawyers Association, no, I'm sorry, it's the Anti-Christian Lawyers Association*) had a big law suit over it, and it went to the Supreme Court. The Supreme Court ruled that the Louisiana law was unconstitutional. The judges said that the law was not necessary because teachers already have the right to teach creationism. Any public school teacher that wants to read the Bible story to their children about the creation is allowed. Boys and girls our textbook says the world evolved over billions of years. There are many different philosophies or theories on how the world got here. Let me read you another one that many people believe.

You can, by law, read the Bible account of creation in the public school class room. If somebody says that you can't, they are mistaken. Children, if somebody gives you a hard time about reading your Bible in school, or witnessing in school, or passing out tracts in the public school, you need to get the book, *Students Legal Rights on a Public School Campus* by J. W. Brinkley. Students have rights. It is unbelievable what the students can do. The teachers are limited somewhat. Did you know that students have a right to be exempt from a class that is teaching something that is contrary to their beliefs? If they are teaching evolution in the class room, you have a right to be exempt. The students can carry their Bible to class. They can write papers on religious themes. They can witness to other students. They can hold Bible school, and they can have Bible clubs. If your school allows any other club, like a chess club, or drama club, you can have a Bible club. If they say that you can't, you let me know. I will put you in touch with the right people that can straighten them out. There are lawyers, like John Whitehead with the Rutherford Institute, that would be a great help to you. We need to stand up for what is right. The Apostle Paul appealed to Caesar.

Parents and students need to be aware of their rights. We need to get busy or we are going to lose those rights.

***Question.***

*To what extent is genetic engineering possible?*

Much research and advancement have been made in genetic engineering. They have been doing gene splicing, developing disease resistant tomatoes, and those sorts of things. As far as taking DNA from a mosquito, and making a brachiosaurus for Jurassic Park, that is a long way off if it is even possible at all. As far as cloning goes, it is defiantly not being done, and probably would be an impossibility.

I was at a university to speak to a group of hostile students who all believed in evolution. One of the students said, What would you say if they could make life in the laboratory? How about it, what would you say then? I said, Well, that would prove that it takes a lot of intelligence to create life. Wouldnt it? It would take a lot of design and intelligence. Im not going to say that they are not ever going to be able to do it, but if they did, it certainly would not prove evolution. It would prove creation.

I dont know how far they are going to go in genetic engineering. Im a little nervous that they might develop a germ for which there is no antidote. I would be very cautious when messing with the genetic structure. There may be great physical repercussions from developing something that cannot be controlled.

***Question.***

*What about the zodiac, the gospel in the stars?*

I believe that the zodiac is the gospel in the stars. When God first made this world they did not have a Bible. Apparently the symbols or the patterns in the stars, the constellations, depict the gospel story. It starts with Virgo the virgin, and how she brought forth a son.

Apparently when God made the world he put the gospel in the stars, and that was the first Bible. To make sure the information was not lost through history, some of the wise men, possibly Adam, Enoch, or somebody else before the flood, built the Sphinx in Egypt. The Sphinx is the face of a woman with the body of a lion, symbolizing how the zodiac begins with Virgo the virgin, and ends with Leo the lion. To make sure that knowledge was not totally lost after the flood, some very wise men, possibly Noah and Shem who lived hundreds of years after the flood, built the Great Pyramid to preserve a lot of the wisdom of the ancient, and to preserve the gospel until we had a written Bible.

This may sound far fetched to you, but I believe if you were to study more of the zodiac it would fascinate you. Just the mathematics that is involved would cause you to say, WOW! Satan, of course, has stolen the glory and perverted it. Today, it is the horoscope. They worship the stars instead of studying the stars. The pyramid is now the symbol for the *Illuminati*, and the symbol for the *New World Order*. It was originally for the Lord.

***Question.***

*What really happened to David Koresh?*

There is no question that the guy was a screwball and a cult leader, but do you know who really attacked the Koresh cult? Did you know that the black suited organization that attacked the Koresh cult was a United Nations task force? There is a United Nations task force, including 300,000 foreign troops in America. Their job is to be prepared to put down resistance and rebellion, especially among cults. If you happen to believe the Bible, send your children to a Christian school, rebel, hoard guns, ammunition or food, or are nervous about the government, you are considered to be a dangerous cult in their minds.

I heard a man give his testimony who manages a mental institution. He told me that the government pays him to keep 60 percent of his beds empty. They do this because they think there is going to be a great influx in the near future. They are going to have to round up masses of people just as Hitler did, and put them in mental institutions because they are going to be insane. Guess who they think are insane? Christians. If you believe the Bible, you will be considered to be insane. You will spend the next twenty years in a mental institution.

As a side note, you may be interested to know that the Federal Reserve system that prints the money is not part of the government, but rather, it is a private corporation. They print our paper bills for about two and one half cents each. They rent them to the government for face value. That is one thing that continually increases the national debt. We owe money to the federal reserve system.

***Question.***

*How did California get creationism taught in the school system?*

This is not only happening in California, but it is taking place all over the country. What has happened for instance, in Morton, Illinois, and in Peoria, Illinois, is that many of the school districts have told their teachers to keep evolution out of their curriculum. They are told not to mention it because they were getting too many complaints. If a school board member gets four or five complaints they will do something about it. That is all they need. What needs to happen is the Christians need to complain, and that is not being done enough. We have not put on the pressure. Madelyn Murray OHare was just one person, and she got prayer out of the entire US school system because of her persistence. I don't think that Christians ought to try to get prayer and creationism into the schools. I think that we ought to try to get evolution out of our school systems. Don't mention creation. Don't go to you school board and say, Hey, I think that we ought to teach the Bible in school! Do this instead. Say, Wait a minute! We can't teach evolution. It is a religion. They say that we can't teach religion in schools, but we are already teaching religion. Evolution is a religion, not a proven or provable science. I would hit very hard at that. Here is what is going to happen.

When you start hitting hard at evolution to get it out of the textbooks, they are going to say, Wait a minute! How about if we teach both? You can then settle for that. Creationism taught along side of evolution will show evolution to be ridiculous. Dont go in asking to teach both because they will not do it. You need to get them to make the compromise.

What happened in Vista, California was the Christians there became concerned and elected Christians to the school board majority. They now have three Bible-believing Christians on the board and two that are not. They have a majority, and they simply voted in a resolution that states, If you are going to talk about origins, you must also include discussions on creationism. That is fair. Actually the discussion of origins has nothing to do with school, and teachers should not touch it. It has more to do with religion instead. Many districts around the country have taken this approach. Parkview school district in the St. Louis area did the same thing. Christians took over the school board and voted in creationism. That can be done in any school district anywhere, and it ought to be done.

There is something happening at a bigger level that is going to bypass all of that. There is a very strong movement that has a lot of steam behind it to get a nationalized curriculum. It is called *Goals 2000*. Do whatever you can within the law to keep your school out of the *Goals 2000* program. You dont want in that program. It is going to be big brother deciding what your children learn, what propaganda they are fed. The solution is going to sound radical. The solution is to close the public school system down. The national government and the state government should have nothing to do with education. Every county should run their own school. There should be a local county school district. None of the money should go to Washington or the capitol of your state. It should stay in the county, and the government should have nothing to do it. We should push for less government, less national and state government, and push for more local control.

All of the efforts to take over the school boards, I believe, will be undercut when they get a nationalized school board and a nationalized curriculum. Children can get evolution out of their schools. If they to look ahead in their textbook , and see that evolution is going to be taught, they can say, Hey, thats not what I believe. They can go home and talk to their parents, they should be sweet, be kind, be Christian about it, not make a big stink, not embarrass their teacher in front of the class, but get their parents to go to the principal and say, In two weeks they are going to be discussing this chapter on evolution. I do not want my child taught that. I want my child to be exempt. If 85 percent of the class is absent that day, pretty soon they will figure out that they need to skip that part of the curriculum because nobody wants to learn it.

If you are a Christian in a school system you should be a good student. If you are a goof off and a trouble maker and a lazy student, dont tell them you are a Christian. You are not helping. Do your best. Dont get in trouble. Be nice. Be obedient. Be a straight A student if you can. When you do these things, your testimony will mean something. You can always witness to your teacher. Your teacher might already be saved. All of the teachers in your school might be saved. Maybe you need to give some tape or books to the teachers or school board members, and say, Would you watch this and tell me what you think? Give them one of my video tapes or this book. This is

something that any student can do with their teacher. You need to convert them. They are not the enemy. Some are very sincere and want to help, but they are just teaching what they have been taught. You need to expose them to the creationist material. They may have never heard of it. In order to teach in a public school, you have to get your degree from a public university. In doing so, the evolutionists preserve what they want taught. We just need to break the cycle.

**Question.**

*How did the mountains rise and the valleys sink as the Bible says?*

I think that the earth's crust was cracked, possibly from a number of factors. It could have been from the impact of the ice meteor that was discussed in chapter five. Maybe it occurred from the fountains of the deep breaking up. The fault lines might be the rips in the earth's crust where it actually broke and allowed the fountains of the deep through. Once there is a break in the rock it is able to shift and float a little bit. It might have been caused by natural forces from the weight of the water causing some spots to lift up, and others sinking down. Nobody in geology questions the idea of continents rising and sinking. The evolutionists say that it happened millions of times down through the years causing new layers; whereas, the creationists say that all the layers were formed in a year, and then they rose up after the flood.

Neither one can be proved scientifically. In order for it to be scientific it has to be observable, testable, and demonstrable. Evolution is none of those, and neither is creationism. Therefore, I cannot scientifically prove creationism. That is why it states on my business card that I'll pay \$10,000 for anybody with evidence for evolution. This is what they always tell me, Well, no! We can't prove evolution. Can you prove creationism. That is exactly what I was hoping they would say. I would say, No, I can't prove creationism. I just believe in it. You are admitting that you can't prove evolution. You believe in it, right? He will say, Okay, we cannot prove it scientifically. I will say, Since neither of us can prove what we strongly believe in, both of us have a belief system, both of us really have a religion. They will say, Yes, you are right. We both have a religion. I will say, Okay then, I have a question. Why do we all have to pay for your religion to be taught in the school system? Ah ha! STRIKE! That is exactly the point. I can't prove creationism, but they can't prove evolution. It is a religion, so it should not be taught.

**Question.**

*How did salt water fish come about if the oceans were once fresh water?*

Some of the fish would have been killed in the flood, but not all of them. There was plenty of water in the seas. The catastrophes would have been in the local areas where the fountains of the deep broke up, and there was

volcanic activity. There was no doubt a large population of fish killed, but some survived. Noah did not have to have fish on the ark.

I believe that the oceans were all fresh water prior to the flood. After the flood, the salts began leaching out of the continents into the oceans, and the rivers contained some salts that were carried to the oceans. It is a fact that the oceans are getting saltier every day. The fish have gradually adjusted to that salt.

There is a man in Minnesota that has two huge aquariums in his home, one is a salt water aquarium, and the other is fresh water. Over about a ten-year period, he slowly decreased the amount of salt in the salt water aquarium. Normally, there should be about 3.6 percent salt. As he slowly brought the saltwater down lower and lower, he slowly added salt to the fresh water. In about ten years, he was able to get both of them to about half salinity, and then he mixed all the fish together. They are doing fine.

I believe over a 4,000 years span, some of the animals have gradually learned to live in the salt. They have adapted to their environment, which has nothing to do with evolution. There are salt water crocodile and fresh water crocodile, which are totally different species, but they are still crocodiles. They are no longer inner-fertile, they cannot breed together, but they are still the same kind of animal. That is a variation within the created kind. There are salt water bass and fresh water bass. I believe that there has been an adaptation that has taken place in the past 4,400 years after the flood.

### ***Question.***

*Is the NAFTA a stepping stone toward the New World Order?*

Absolutely! There are those who really object to nationalities. Part of the globalist movement is to get people to think globally instead of nationally. Nationalism like, I love America! is really offensive to the globalists. They want to get you to get rid of the I love America! and get you to say I love the world! . They want to get all the children involved in the Save the Planet, Plant a Tree, Go Hug a Tree. Watch out for the globalist movement, and the ridicule and the eventual persecution of nationalist, the people who love a country instead of the world. There are those who are strongly committed to the globalist movement.

### ***Question.***

*How did volcanoes erupt?*

Apparently, the inside of the earth is liquid, hot, molten rock, and if there are cracks in the earth's crust, the pressure build up will force this molten rock through those cracks. Nobody knows what triggers an eruption. Sometimes there is an earthquake first, and it cracks the rock allowing the molten rock to squirt out. Sometimes it just flows out slowly making a nice big pile. The Hawaiian volcanoes are not very violent as a rule. The lava from these volcanoes just flows out kind of slow, while others blow up. Krakatoa, a volcano in Java near Vietnam, blew up in 1883. It was such a



bad explosion that it made a tidal wave. The tidal wave traveled almost two-thousand miles an hour. It crossed the Indian ocean and hit Madagascar and killed 36,000 people. They were not even near the eruption, but the eruption had far-reaching effects. Some are nice and gentle; while others are not so nice and gentle.

## APPENDIX

The creationist world-view says that God made the universe about six thousand years ago. The evolutionist world-view teaches that the universe made itself from nothing about twenty million years ago. One of these opposing world-views obviously is wrong.

These time-line charts show the time difference presented. If the evolution chart were drawn to the same scale as the creation chart (1 inch = 1000 years), the evolution chart would have to be 315 miles long! The entire theory of evolution is built upon the faulty assumption that the origin of the universe was “billions of years ago” (bya). The human mind cannot grasp “billions of years.” As with most fairy tales, evolution relies on “long ago” and “far away” to make the impossible seem true. My advice: Don’t bet your life on evolution!

Ten years is a long time. On the creation chart it would be .01 inch (the thickness of a piece of paper); on the evolution chart it would be invisible.

Few people will live 100 years. Lincoln was President 130 years ago which is only .13 inch on the creation chart and invisible on the evolution chart.

Columbus sailed 500 years ago. The entire creation chart of 6,000 years would be less than 2 millionths of an inch (still invisible) on the evolution chart! The entire fictitious geologic column of 600 million years would be only .18 inch (less than 3/16 inch on the evolution chart at the scale it is drawn here.

Questions to ask evolutionist (see the list of questions on page A-11)

1. In the *big bang*, what exploded? And where did it come from?

When they admit they don’t know, ask, “Which is easier to believe: ‘In the beginning God,’ or ‘In the beginning Dirt’?”

2. Do you believe in *spontaneous generation* (life coming from non-living matter)?

The theory of evolution is something people chooses to believe. They do not and cannot know that it is true. Real science deals with things that are observable and testable, and neither creation nor evolution are scientifically provable. Both views are religious in nature. Yet, all US taxpayers are forced to pay for the religion of evolution to be promoted in our school system - a clear violation of the First Amendment.

### **Indoctrination in Evolution**

Graphics not included

### **Sexually Transmitted Diseases**

Graphics not included

### **Scholastic Aptitude Test Scores**

Graphics not included

### **Violent Crime Offenses**

Graphics not included

### **Unwed Birth Rates**

Graphics not included

### **Divorce Rates Unmarried Couples**

Graphics not included

### **Carbon 14 Calibration Curve**

Graphics not included

## **Faulty Assumptions Used in all Radiometric Dating Methods.**

**1. Atmospheric C is equilibrium.** This assumption is wrong. It has been shown that the amount of C in the atmosphere is still increasing. It has been estimated that the C in the earth's atmosphere would reach equilibrium (the formation rate would be equal to the decay rate) in about 30,000 years. Research indicates that the amount of C is still increasing and has not yet reached equilibrium. This indicates a young earth (less than 10,000 years). This also modifies all dates obtained by C decay. As the earth's magnetic field decays, more cosmic radiation is allowed to penetrate into our atmosphere, 16 clicks (on a Geiger counter) per minute per gram (16 DPM/Gc) is typical in living objects today. Plants and animals that lived on the earth four thousand years ago would have had much less C in their body to start with. This would make them appear to be thousands of years older than they really are.

**2. Decay rate remains constant.**

This assumption has been shown to be uncertain many times. Several factors can effect the rate of C decay. The 11 year solar sun spot cycle is one such factor. Since the rate of decay may not be constant, dates obtained by C must be accepted only with caution.

**3. Initial amount of C can be known.**

This assumption has been demonstrated to be wrong many times. Different parts of the same sample often yield different ratios. Various living samples give very different ratios. Some items cannot be tested with carbon dating even though they contain carbon.

**4. The sample being tested has not been contaminated.**

This assumption is very difficult, if not impossible to prove. Parent of daughter products may have leached in or out of the sample. Many lab test have confirmed that this can happen.

**5. The amount of C is assumed to be constant.**

This assumption is not rational. The oldest sample of independently known age is Hemaka, the Egyptian mummy from 2700 - 3100 BC. To base such an assumption on such a small section of the curve is not wise. (Secular writers of antiquity tend to exaggerate ages so even these dates are suspect.)

**6. The geologic column can be used as a base to calibrate the C dates.**

This assumption is not wise. The ages applied to the geologic column are based on the assumption that evolution is true. This fictitious column (invented in the 1800's to discredit the Bible) does not exist anywhere in the world except in textbooks. Polystrata fossils, missing layers, layers out of order, misplaced fossils, and layers in reverse order all invalidate the geologic column. (More information can be obtained on this subject in chapters four through six.) the assumed age of the sample will dictate which dating method is used since each will give a very different result.

## **Longevity Chart Adam to Joseph**

Graphics not included

## **Points to Ponder About the Great Flood and Noah's Ark**

II Peter 3:3-8 tells us that people who scoff at the Bible are "willingly ignorant" of the Creation and the Flood. In order to understand science and the Bible, we must not be ignorant of those two great events in Earth's history.

1. Over 250 Flood legends from all parts of the world have been found. Most have similarities to the Genesis story.

2. Noah's ark was only built to float, not to sail anywhere. Many ark scholars believe that the ark was a "barge" shape, not a pointed "boat" shape. This would greatly increase the cargo capacity.
3. Even using the small 18-inch cubit (my height is 6-ft. 1-in. and have a 21-in. cubit) the ark was large enough to hold all the required animals, people, and food with room to spare.
4. The length-to-width ratio of 6 to 1 is what shipbuilders today often use. This is the best ratio for stability in stormy weather. (God thinks of everything!)
5. The ark may have had a "moon-pool" (sometimes called moon-pull) in the center. The larger ships would have a hole in the center of the bottom of the boat with walls extending up into the ship. There are several reasons for this feature.
  - a. It allowed water to go up into the hole as the ship crested waves. This would be needed to relieve strain on longer ships
  - b. The rising and lowering water acted as a piston to pump fresh air in and out of the ship. This would prevent the buildup of dangerous gasses from all the animals on board.
  - c. The hole was a great place to dump garbage into the ocean without going outside.
6. The ark may have had large stones suspended over the sides to keep it more stable in rough weather. Many of these stones have been found in the region where the ark landed.
7. Noah lived 950 years! Many Bible scholars believe the pre-Flood people were much larger than modern man. Skeletons over 11 feet tall have been found! If Noah were taller, his cubit (elbow to fingertip) would have been much larger also. This would make the ark larger by the same ratio.
8. God told Noah to bring two of each kind, not of each species or variety. Noah only had two of the dog kind which would include the wolves, coyotes, foxes, mutts, etc. The kind grouping is probably closer to our modern family division in taxonomy. This would greatly reduce the number of animals on the ark. Animals have diversified into many varieties in the last 4,400 years since the Flood. This is not anything similar to great claims that the evolutionists teach. (They teach that "kelp can turn into Kent," given enough time!)
9. Noah did not have to get the animals. God brought them to him (Gen. 6:20, "shall come to thee").
10. Only land-dwelling, air-breathing animals had to be included on the ark (Gen. 7:15, "in which is the breath of life").
11. Many animals sleep, hibernate, or become very inactive during bad weather.
12. All animals (and people) were vegetarians before and during the Flood according to Gen. 1:20-30 with Gen. 9:3.
13. The pre-Flood people were probably *much* smarter and more advanced than people today. The longer life-spans, Adam's direct contact with God, and the fact that they could glean the wisdom of many generations that were still alive would greatly expand their knowledge base.

14. The Bible says that the highest mountains were covered by 15 cubits of water. This is half the height of the ark. The ark was safe from scraping bottom at all times.
15. The mountains, as we have them today, did not exist until after the Flood when "the mountains arose and the valleys sank down" (Ps. 104:5-9, Gen. 8:3-8).
16. There is enough water in the oceans right now to cover the earth 8,000 feet deep if the surface of the earth were smooth.
17. Many claim to have seen the ark in recent times in the area the Bible says it landed. There are two primary schools of thought about the actual site of the ark (see chapter 2 for more on this.) Much energy and time has been expended to try to prove each view. Some believe the ark is on Mt. Ararat, covered by snow (CBS showed a one-hour special in 1993 about this site). The other group believes the ark is 17 miles south of Mt. Ararat in a valley called "the valley of eight" (8 souls on the ark). The Bible says the ark landed in the "mountains" of Ararat, not necessarily on the mountain itself.
18. The continents were not separated until 100-300 years after the Flood (Gen. 10:25). The people and animals had time to migrate anywhere on earth by then.
19. The top 3,000 feet of Mt. Everest (from 26,000-29,000 feet) is made up of sedimentary rock packed with seashells and other ocean-dwelling animals.
20. Sedimentary rock is found all over the world. Sedimentary rock is laid down in water.
21. Petrified clams in the closed position (found all over the world) testify to their rapid burial while they were still alive.
22. Bent rock layers, fossil graveyards, and polystrata fossils are best explained by a Flood.
23. People choose to not believe in the Flood because it speaks of the judgment of God on sin (II Peter 3:3-8).
- 24.

## **Questions For People Who Believe In The Theory Of Evolution**

The test of any theory is: does it provide answers to basic questions? Some well-meaning but misguided people think evolution is a reasonable theory to explain man's questions about the universe. Evolution is not a good theory, it is just a pagan religion masquerading as science. Below are a few of the questions that should be answered.

1. Where did the space for the universe come from?
2. Where did matter come from?
3. Where did the laws of the universe come from (gravity, inertia, etc.)?
4. How did matter get so perfectly organized?
5. Where did the energy come from to do all the organizing?
6. When, where, why and how did life come from dead matter?
7. When, where, why and how did life learn to reproduce itself?
8. With whom did the first cell capable of sexual reproduction reproduce?

9. Why would any plant or animal want to reproduce more of its kind since this would only make more mouths to feed and decrease the chances of survival?
10. How can mutations (recombining of the genetic code) create any new improved varieties? (Recombining English letters will never produce Chinese books.)
11. Is it possible that similarities in design between different animals prove a common creator instead of a common ancestor?
12. Since natural selection only works with the genetic information available and tends only to keep a species stable, how do you explain increasing complexity in the genetic code?
13. When, where, why and how did:
  - a. Single-celled plants become multicelled? (Where are the two-celled and three-celled intermediates?)
  - b. Single-celled animals evolve?
  - c. Fish change to amphibians?
  - d. Amphibians change to reptiles?
  - e. Reptiles change to birds? (Lungs, bones, eyes, reproductive organs, heart, method of locomotion, body covering, etc., are all very different!)
  - f. How did the intermediate forms live?
14. When, where, why, how and from what did:
  - a. Whales evolve?
  - b. Sea horses evolve?
  - c. Bats evolve?
  - e. Ears evolve?
  - d. Eyes evolve?
  - e. Hair, skin, feathers, scales, nails, claws, etc., evolve?
15. Which evolved first (How, and how long, did it work without the others):
  - a. The digestive system, the food to be digested, the appetite, the ability to find and eat the food, the digestive juices, or the body's resistance to its own digestive juices.
  - b. The drive to reproduce or the ability to reproduce?
  - c. The lungs, the mucus lining to protect them, the throat or the perfect mixture of gasses to be breathed into the lungs?
  - d. DNA or RNA to carry the DNA message to cell parts?
  - e. The termite or the flagella in his intestines that actually digest the cellulose?
  - f. The plants or the insects that live on and pollinate the plants?
  - g. The bones, ligaments, tendons, blood supply, muscles to move the bones, nervous system, repair system, or hormone system?
  - h. The immune system or the need for it?
16. There are many thousands of examples of symbiosis that defy an evolutionary explanation. Why must we teach students that evolution is the only explanation for these relationships?
17. How would evolution explain mimicry? Did the plants and animals develop mimicry by chance, their intelligent choice, or design?
18. When, where, why and how did man evolve feelings? Love, mercy, guilt, etc., would never evolve in the theory of evolution.

**After you answer the questions above, please look carefully at your answers and answer these questions.**

1. Are you sure your answers are reasonable, right, and scientifically provable, or do you just believe that it may have happened the way you have answered? (Do these answers reflect your religion or your science?)
2. Do your answers show more or less faith than the person who says "God must have designed it"?
3. Is it possible that an unseen creator designed this universe? If God is excluded at the beginning of the discussion by our definition of science, how could it be shown that he did create the universe if he did?
4. Is it wise and fair to only show students the theory of evolution and teach them that it is a fact?
5. What is the end result of a belief in evolution (Lifestyle, society, attitude about others, eternal destiny, etc.)?
6. Could it be that people accept evolution because of some of these factors:
  - a. It is all they have been taught?
  - b. They like the freedom from a God? (No moral absolutes, etc.)
  - c. They are bound to support the theory for fear of losing their job or status or grade point averages?
  - d. They are too proud to admit they are wrong?
  - e. They know that evolution is the only philosophy that can be used to justify their political agenda of:
    - i. Communism
    - ii. Racism
    - iii. Abortion
    - iv. Nazism
    - v. Socialism
    - vi. Gay rights
    - vii. Women's liberation
    - viii. Extreme environmentalism
    - ix. Euthanasia
    - x. Pornography
    - xi. Humanism
    - xii. New Age Movement

7. Should we continue to use outdated, disproved, questionable, or inconclusive evidences to support the theory of evolution because we don't have a suitable substitute (Piltdown man, recapitulation theory, Archaeopteryx, Lucy, Java Man, Neanderthal Man, etc.)?
8. Should parents be allowed to require that evolution not be taught in their school system unless equal time is given to creation?
9. What are you risking if you are wrong?
10. Aren't you tired of faith in a system that can't be true? Wouldn't it be great to know the God who made you and accept his love and forgiveness?
11. If I could show you from the Bible how to have your sins forgiven, would you be interested? If so, call me.

***Dr. Kent Hovind***  
***29 Cummings Road***  
***Pensacola, FL 32503***  
***(904) 479-8987***

I have many video and audio tapes on the subject of creation, evolution, proofs that the earth is not "Billions of years old," the geologic column, carbon dating, and dinosaurs. Call or write for information about these materials. I would also be glad to present my material in person to any group of interested people. After teaching high school science for 15 years, my deep concern for the fact that students were being deceived by the lie of evolution led me to establish ***Creation Science Evangelism***. I now travel and speak over 700 times each year on this vital subject. Please don't hesitate to call me if I can be of help.

## **Flying in the Face of Evolution**

*"Evolution is a fairy tale for grown-ups. This theory has helped nothing in the progress of science. It is useless."*

**Professor Louis Bounoure**

Former President, Biological Society of Strasbourg  
 Director of the Strasbourg Zoological Museum

*"Scientists who go about teaching that evolution is a fact of life are great con-men, and the story they are telling may be the greatest hoax ever. In explaining evolution, we do not have one iota of fact."*

**Dr. T. N. Tahmisian**

Atomic Energy Commission, USA

*"The fossils that decorate our family tree are so scarce that there are still more scientists than specimens. The remarkable fact is that all the physical evidence we have for human evolution can still be placed, with room to spare, inside a coffin!"*

**Dr. Lyall Watson**

"The Water People," *Science Digest*  
 vol. 90 (May 1982) p.44



*"I myself am convinced that the theory of evolution, especially the extent to which it's been applied, will be one of great jokes in the history books of the future. Posterity will marvel that so very flimsy and dubious an hypothesis could be accepted with the incredible credulity that it has."*

**Malcolm Muggeridge**

World-famous journalist and philosopher

*"This notion of species as 'natural kinds' fits splendidly with creationist tenets of pre-Darwinian age. Louis Agassiz even argued that species are God's individual thoughts, made incarnate so that we might perceive both His majesty and His message. Species, Agassiz wrote, are 'instituted by Divine Intelligence as the categories of his mode of thinking.' But how could a division of the organic world into discrete entities be justified by an evolutionary theory that proclaimed ceaseless change as the fundamental fact of nature?"*

**Stephen Jay Gould**

Professor Geology and Paleontology  
Harvard University

*"The more statistically improbable a thing is, the less can we believe that it just happened by blind chance. Superficially the obvious alternative to chance is an intelligent Designer."*

**Dr. Richard Dawkins**

Department of Zoology  
Oxford University

*"And in Man is a three-pound brain which, as far as we know, is the most complex and orderly arrangement of matter in the universe."*

**Dr. Isaac Asimov**

Former Professor  
Boston School of Medicine

*"The universe we see when we look out to it's furthest horizons contains a hundred billion galaxies. Each of these galaxies contains another hundred billion stars. The silent embarrassment of modern astrophysics is that we do not know how even a single one of these stars managed to form. There's no lack of ideas, of course; we just can't substantiate them."*

**M. Harwit**

noted astrophysicist

*"In fact evolutionary trees that adorn our textbooks have data only at the tips and nodes of their branches; the rest is inference, however reasonable, not the evidence of fossils."*

**Stephen Jay Gould**

Professor of Geology and Paleontology  
Harvard University

*"Contrary to what most scientist write, the fossil record does not support the Darwinian theory of evolution because it is this theory (there are several) which we use to interpret the fossil record. By doing so we are guilty of circular reasoning if we then say the fossil record supports this theory."*

**Ronald P. West, Ph.D.**

Assistant Professor of Paleontology  
Kansas State University

*"As yet we have not been able to trace the phylogenetic history of single group of modern plants from it's beginning to the present."*

**Chester A. Arnold**

Professor of Botany Curator of Fossil Plants  
University of Michigan

*"The [revolutionary] origin of birds is largely a matter of deduction. There is no fossil evidence of the stages through which the remarkable change from reptile to bird was achieved."*

**W. E. Swinton**

British Museum of Natural History  
London

*"In recent years several authors have written popular books on human origins which were based more on fantasy and subjectivity than on fact and objectivity. At the moment science cannot offer a full answer on the origin of humanity..."*

**Dr. Robert Martin**

Senior Research Fellow  
Zoological Society of London

*"If the C date supports our theories, we put it in the main text. If it does not entirely contradict them, we put it in a footnote. And if it is completely 'out of date,' we just drop it."*

**T. Save-Soderbergh and I. U. Olsson**

Institute of Egyptology and Institute of Physics respectively  
University of Uppsala, Sweden

*"The Big Bang is presumed to have produced just hydrogen and helium, only 2 of the 92 elements of the earth's crust."*

**Dr. Robert V. Gentry**  
Research Physicist

## Dr. Hovind's \$10,000 Offer

I have a standing offer of \$10,000 to anyone which can give empirical evidence (scientific proof) for evolution.<sup>†</sup> My \$10,000 offer (made in 1990) is still valid to demonstrate that the hypothesis of evolution is nothing more than a religious belief.

<sup>†</sup>**Note:** *When I use the word evolution*, I am not referring to the minor variations found in all of the various life forms. I am referring to the general theory of evolution which teaches these four major events took place without "God."

1. Time, space, and matter came into existence by themselves.
2. Matter created life by itself.
3. Early life forms learned to reproduce themselves.
4. Major changes occurred between these diverse life forms. (i.e., fish changed to amphibians, amphibians changed to reptiles, and reptiles changed to birds or mammals).

*Webster's New World Dictionary*, Second Collage Edition, defines **empirical** as "relying or based solely on experiment and observation rather than theory."

People believe in evolution; they do not know that it is true. While beliefs are certainly fine to have, it is **not fair to force onto the students in our public school system the teaching of one belief, at taxpayer's expense**. it is my contention that evolutionism is a religious world-view that is not supported by science, Scripture, popular opinion, or common sense. The exclusive teaching of this dangerous, mind-altering philosophy in tax-supported schools, parks, museums, etc., is a clear violation of the First Amendment.

### How to collect the \$10,000

Prove, beyond any reasonable doubt, that the process of evolution (option 3 below) is the only possible way the observed phenomena could have come into existence. Only empirical evidence is acceptable. Persons wishing to collect the \$10,000 may submit their evidence in writing or schedule time for a public presentation. As in any fair court of law, the accuser must also rule out any other possible explanations. To the best of my ability, I will be fair and honest in my evaluation and judgment as the validity of the evidence presented.

Evolution is presented in our public school textbooks as a process that:

1. Brought time, space, and matter into existence from nothing.
2. Organized that matter into the galaxies, stars, and at least nine planets around our star, the sun. (This process is often referred to as cosmic evolution.)
3. Created the life that exists on at least one of those planets from the non-living matter.

4. Caused the living creatures to be capable of and interested in reproducing themselves.
5. Caused that life to spontaneously diversify into different forms of living things, such as the plants and animals on the earth today.

**The observed phenomena:**

Evolution has been accused of being the only process capable of causing the observed phenomena. As with any just court, the burden of proof rests on the accuser. Most thinking people will agree:

1. A highly ordered universe exist.
2. At least one planet in this complex universe contains an amazing variety of life.
3. Man appears to be the most advanced form of life on this planet.

**The known options:**

Choices of how the observed phenomena came into being:

1. The universe was created by God.
2. The universe always existed.
3. The universe came into being by itself, by purely natural processes (known as evolution). No appeal to the supernatural is needed.

**If you are convinced that evolution is an indisputable fact**, may I suggest that you offer \$10,000 for any empirical or historical evidence against the general theory of evolution. This might include the following:

1. The earth is not billions of years old (thus destroying the possibility of evolution having happened as it is being taught).
2. No animal has ever been observed changing into any fundamentally different kind of animal.
3. No one has ever observed life spontaneously arising from non-living matter.
4. Matter cannot make itself out of nothing.

**My suggestion:** proponents of the theory of evolution would do well to admit that they believe in evolution, but they do not know that it happened the way they teach. They should call evolution their "faith or religion," and stop including it in books of science. Give up faith in the silly religion of evolutionism, and trust the God of the Bible (who is the Creator of this universe and will be your Judge one day soon) to forgive you and save you from the coming judgment on man's sin.